This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

51

Presented by

Mrs Henry R Hoyt

to the

New York Public Library

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

Wherein are exhibited

VIEWS of ſeveral ſtriking Scenes, with curious and intereſting ANECDOTES, of the moſt noted Perſons in every Rank of Life, whoſe Hands it paſſed through, in AMERICA, ENGLAND, HOLLAND, GERMANY, and PORTUGAL.

———— *Hold the Mirror up to Nature,*
To ſhew Vice its own Image, Virtue his own Likeneſs,
And the very Age and Body of the Times
His Form and Preſſure. SHAKESPEAR.

Qui capit, ille facit.

By *an* ADEPT.

The THIRD EDITION, greatly enlarged and corrected.

In FOUR VOLUMES.

VOL. III.

LONDON:

Printed for JOHN HILL in the *Strand.*

M,DCC,LXVII.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
1901

ADVERTISEMENT

PREFIXED TO THE

THIRD and FOURTH VOLUMES.

THE circumſtances in which *the Adventures of a Guinea* fell into the hands of the Editor, as explained in the General Preface, account for this and the former Additions to that Work.

The uncommon favour with which the firſt Edition was received, encouraged him to ſpare no pains for the recovery of the reſt of the Manuſcript: Though his ſucceſs however in this attempt exceeded his expectations, fear of the prejudice, in general too juſtly, entertained againſt *Continuations*, prevented his publiſhing, in the Second Edition, any more of what he had recovered, than could be added without enhancing the price. But as the ſale of ſo many numerous impreſſions, ſince that Edition, has entirely removed every ſhadow of ſuch fear, he thinks it would be injuſtice to the Public to withhold the reſt from them any longer.

As to the objection made to *Continuations*, that they are written after the firſt deſign is compleated, and when the imagination is exhauſted, it can by no means affect the following ſheets, which are really *a Reſtitution of the Original*, not an addition of any thing new; as will plainly appear to the judicious Reader, who will find the ſame ſcope of imagination, the ſame ſpirited freedom and depth of remark in every period of theſe Volumes, which ſo eminently diſtinguiſhed the former; and trace the genuine connection through the whole.

For one great diſadvantage which theſe Volumes lie under, Candour will make the juſt allowance, when the occaſion of it is conſidered.

This is the Printing of theſe Parts, thus detached, and by themſelves, with only references to the places, where they follow in the Context of the former Volumes; by which means they loſe the advantages of the general Fable, or as I may ſay, *Machine*, which ſo happily introduces and ſupports the whole, and of which no more

could be recovered; all, but what was at firſt publiſhed, being cancelled by the Orthodoxy of the pretended Clergyman, into whoſe hands the Manuſcript unfortunately fell, who ſpared no more than was indiſpenſibly neceſſary to open the deſign *.

Had the Editor attended ſolely to his own intereſt, it would have ſuggeſted to him to have publiſhed this, as he did the former Edition, inſerted regularly according to the Connection; as the eſtabliſhed reputation of the Work would enſure the ſale of the whole, even to thoſe who had before purchaſed the former Volumes. But this was an artifice he was incapable of uſing; and he choſe to publiſh theſe Volumes in this manner, rather than incur the leaſt ſuſpicion of ſo mercenary a deſign. He hopes therefore, that a diſadvantage occaſioned by ſuch a delicate diſintereſtedneſs will not be looked upon as a defect; and that the whole will be viewed together, before any part is accuſed of abruptneſs, or want of uniformity to the general deſign.

The abſurdity, and injuſtice of levelling the general reproof of vice, againſt particular Perſons, and tracing to real characters a work of mere imagination, are too glaring to require proof. Mr *Addiſon*, in the inſtance he has given in one of his *Spectators*, of *the whole Duty of Man*, has ſhewn that the beſt book that ever was written (humanely ſpeaking) is liable to be conſtrued into a ſcandalous libel, by ſuch a *Perverſion*.

The Editor of this Work has the ſatisfaction to ſee, that whatever injurious attempts of that kind were at firſt made againſt it, they have not been able to prejudice it in the opinion of the Public, as appears from the great and continued demand for it, for ſo many Years. Defamation may pleaſe malignancy of Man for a day; but it muſt be merit that can ſtand the teſt of time. Such inſinuations are long ſince forgot, becauſe unſupported by truth; as will all of the ſame nature, which may be made againſt the Volumes now offered to the Public, while the merit of them ſhall remain for the entertainment and inſtruction of ages.

* *See the General Preface*

CONTENTS

CONTENTS

OF VOLUME THE THIRD.

BOOK THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

INtroduction. CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice. His maſter finds an ingenious excuſe for returning home; but is unexpectedly ſtopt ſhort by the way. In the common courſe of buſineſs* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice: Character of his new maſter.* Page 1

CHAP. II.

Motives of the enterprize in which CHRYSAL'S *maſter was engaged. In a private conference between him and his agent, ſome curious ſecrets, in a buſineſs not generally underſtood, are laid open, and a ſeeming contradiction naturally reconciled.* 5

CHAP. III.

The behaviour of CHRYSAL'S *maſter on hearing an intereſting piece of news, with his conciſe method of conducting an enterprize.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice for that of a perſon of a very different character. An eloquent ſpeech produces the uſual effects of eloquence.* 9

CHAP. IV.

A characteriſtick conference between CHRYSAL'S *new maſter, and his friend the general. Remarks on war; with the cauſes and conſequences of ſeveral celebrated victories. A motive not commonly attended to, for courage in ſoldiers and ſubaltern officers, accounts politically for ſome apparent wrongs which they ſuffer.* 12

CHAP. V.

An officer desires to speak with the general, the mention of whom introduces a remarkable instance of ignorance of the world. Anecdotes of the officer; with the bad consequences of a subaltern's attempting to distinguish himself in the army. Page 15

CHAP. VI.

Continued. The Officer acquits himself of the imputation of ingratitude by a piece of foolish generosity. He persuades the soldier, who had saved his life, to quit the army, for an uncommon reason. The consequences of such conduct, with an hint of the best qualifications for rising in the army. 18

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL's *master draws some interesting comparisons between the land and sea services, which account for the different success in them. The officer is admitted, and put under arrest for attempting to do more than his duty.* 21

CHAP. VIII.

The affair is made up, by CHRYSAL's *master, on the General's making an apology to the officer, and accounting candidly for what he had done. The officer quits the army, leaving an interesting piece of instruction behind him.—Some short but striking sketches of the progress of the enterprize.* 25

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL's *attention is agreeably diverted by the appearance of a young* SPANIARD, *who throws himself at the feet of his master to prefer an extraordinary request. The History of* DON ALPHONSO GUZMAN, *the young* SPANIARD. 28

CHAP. X.

Continued. OLIVIA's *father is taken up by the inquisition, and herself put into a convent, on an* ENGLISH *battery's firing, upon which,* DON ALPHONSO *comes in*

in despair to CHRYSAL's *master to make a very odd request, which he grants at length, and also promises him his assistance to obtain his mistress.* Page 33

CHAP. XI.

The fortunate effect of CHRYSAL's *master's sparing the convent. The mutual advantages to victors and vanquished of articles of capitulation. The only business of a general.* CHRYSAL's *master performs his promise to* ALPHONSO, *into whose service* CHRYSAL *enters.* ALPHONSO *recovers his mistress, whose father is set at liberty by a piece of* FUN *of some* ENGLISH *Sailors. Conclusion of the story of* ALPHONSO. CHRYSAL *changes his service.* 38

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL *makes some striking remarks on a state of absolute liberty. Disappointment of the hopes of the conquerors, with the natural consequences.* CHRYSAL's *master going to take a taste of the pleasures of affluence, is slimmed out of his treasure by a sutler, into whose service* CHRYSAL *enters.* 44

CHAP. XIII.

Character of CHRYSAL's *new master. The right way not to suffer by making mistakes. A curious conversation between* CHRYSAL's *master and two persons of consequence lays open the secrets of some interesting affairs. He makes up a foolish dispute by a sensible treat.* 47

CHAP. XIV.

Continued. The mysteries of agency; and convenience of a military government, with some curious notions of the genteelest ways of rising in life. 51

CHAP. XV.

Affecting consequences of carrying the foregoing schemes into execution; with the conclusion of the character and history of CHRYSAL's *master.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.* 55

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL's *maſter ſwallows a pill, and pleads an important cauſe without ſucceſs. A curious method of parrying one falſe oath by another, with the firſt oath taken by the maſter of a merchant-man. He ſhews another inſtance of his ſkill in ſteering clear of perjury, but without his former ſucceſs. His notion of conſcience.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* Page 59

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome reflections on the policy of impoſing oaths of exculpation. The proper method of preſerving the validity of oaths, with the conſequence of their being adminiſtered indiſcriminately to all perſons, and on all occaſions. An uncommon lecture from a captain of a man of war to his officers, repreſents ſome polite amuſements in an odd light.* 64

CHAP. XVIII.

The folly of a perſon's proſtituting his character to pleaſe his company, aggravated by the dangerous miſtake of ridicule for applauſe. CHRYSAL's *maſter changes place with the chaplain, and preaches him an intereſting ſermon, in which, among remarks more juſt than polite, he gives an uncommon reaſon for the particular deformity of vice in women.* 68

CHAP. XIX.

CHRYSAL *deſcribes true compaſſion, and ſhews the general conſequence of a man's acknowledging diſtreſs, with the reaſons of it.* CHRYSAL's *maſter is prevailed upon by his captain to tell him the cauſe of his melancholy, which is removed by an act of uncommon generoſity.* CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice.* 71

CHAP. XX.

Hiſtory of a lieutenant of a man of war. A compariſon between the rewards of merit, in the land, and ſea-ſervices; with a remarkable inſtance of a great-man's remembering

remembering an old friend. The conſequence of attempting to ſet up for a member of manners, and of a man's not meeting an opportunity of making himſelf remarkable. Page 76

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon method of carrying on a war; with the danger of ſpeaking the truth too plainly, at an improper time. CHRYSAL's *maſter meets his brother. Some account of him. He repreſents certain matters in an odd light.* CHRYSAL *enters into his ſervice. Concluſion of his character.* CHRYSAL *quits his ſervice on an uncommon occaſion, for one, from which he paſſes in the uſual courſe of buſineſs into that of the general.* 81

BOOK THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL's *maſter makes ſome characteriſtick reflections. He is ſurprized at the officer's refuſing to make up matters; and gives a particular reaſon for ſome people's riſing in the world. An extraordinary perſonage enters to him. Deſcription of him. He gives a character of the native* AMERICANS; *and offers ſome intereſting remarks on the return they make to the treatment they meet with; and on the practice of forming in the cloſet, plans of operation for armies in the field. Odd reaſon why the* AMERICANS *are deſirous of gold.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* 87

CHAP. II.

The manner in which CHRYSAL's *maſter was received by his ſubjects. Antiquated principles on which his authority was founded. His odd opinions and conduct in ſome important matters, with the conſequences.* 95

CHAP. III.

CHRYSAL *describes his master's habitation and family. He makes an uncommon progress. The manner in which he found the females of his household engaged. Remarks on* FINERY. *Account of their amusements, with the manner in which they usually ended. The method by which* CHRYSAL'S *master kept peace in his family.* Page 97

CHAP. IV.

CHRYSAL'S *master is honourably rewarded for his services. An unexpected meeting with one of his countrywomen, introduces an uncommon remark on a common matter. The lady gives an odd instance of conjugal love; and refuses the civil offer of* CHRYSAL'S *master, for a natural reason.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.* 102

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL'S *mistress gives some striking instances of female consistency. She is cured of her grief, by a person of accomplishments as extraordinary as her own. The advantage of comparative excellence.* CHRYSAL'S *mistress marries, and he changes his service for that of an old master.* 107

CHAP. VI.

CHRYSAL *arrives in* ENGLAND. *His master is saluted by a sight not very pleasing. The history of the unfortunate hero of the day opens some mysterious scenes.* THE OBVIOUS USE OF COUNCILS OF WAR. 110

CHAP. VII.

Continued. Consequence of the foregoing conduct. An extraordinary sentence attempted to be reversed in an extraordinary manner, and by as extraordinary persons. The reason of this; and why it miscarried. More mysteries. Just fate of the BUNGLERS, *who left their poor* TOOL *in the lurch; with the consequences of this affair to a certain corps.* 113

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

CHRYSAL *changes his service. He gets a view of a court of* CIVIL JUDICATURE, *on an extraordinary occasion. Some reflections out of the common cant on the delays of the law. A whimsical application of an old story produces the strange effects of putting a counsellor out of countenance. The necessity of absolute power in some government; with a common decision, by which nothing is decided.* Page 118

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL's *master joins a remarkable set of company. Their characters.* CHRYSAL *changes his service. Account of the enterprize on which his late master's companions were going; with the convincing arguments they used to procure obedience to their commands.* 122

CHAP. X.

The ruinous appearance of the scene of action supplies matter for mirth to those whose trade it is to laugh at every thing. The point carried against law and reason. Enquiry into the cause of this. The rise of the prejudice against the profession of an actor. 125

CHAP. XI.

Continued. The common consequences of excess of zeal. The professed intent of theatrical representations defeated by this absurd prejudice against actors. The vices against which this prejudice is levelled, in reality the effects of it; with the means of remedying this and other abuses. 128

CHAP. XII.

The system of policy by which CHRYSAL's *master governed his state. Account of his method of parrying poets. The reason why so few new plays are acted. Enquiry into the present state of genius. The general motives for writing plays preclude them from success. Managers and poets equally in fault in their dealings with each other.* 131

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL's *maſter ſits in judgment on ſome pieces offered to him. A poet of faſhion enters. The arguments by which he ſupports his work againſt the objections of* CHRYSAL's *maſter, who makes ſome curious dramatical ſtrictures. The poet, driven from his laſt retreat, the intereſt of his great friends, by the common cant of the houſe's being* FULL *for the ſeaſon, departs in a rage, denouncing their reſentment, which* CHRYSAL's *maſter ſhews his reaſon not to fear the effects of.* Page 134

CHAP. XIV.

Continuation. CHRYSAL's *maſter rejects the work of a poet for his ignorance of the laws of the drama. More dramatical ſtrictures. The poet modeſtly inſiſts that his play is refuſed only becauſe it wants the intereſt of the great; and goes off in an huff. Another poet repulſed for his attachment to the laws of the drama. Arguments againſt theſe laws. The poet refuſes to conform to the preſent taſte; and makes an appeal. One more poet refuſed only for wanting every poetical talent. Remarks on ſomething that affect more than care to own it.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, on an occaſion not common.* 137

CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAL's *maſter engages in a genteel amour. A delicate way of refining pleaſure. His miſtreſs perſuades him that ſhe has poiſoned him, and herſelf. His ſituation on hearing this. Striking proofs of medical ſkill, with the advantage of a regular courſe of practice. An exemplary inſtance of charity and forgiveneſs. Diverts the doctor's attention to the murderess.* 141

CHAP. XVI.

The recovery of the murderess opens a new ſcene. She clears up the myſtery, leſs to the ſatisfaction of the doctors, than of their noble patient, who rewards her liberally for her good news; and ſends them off without their errand. Reflections on ſome genteel matters. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* 145

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL's *master goes to be admitted into an extraordinary society. Some reflections not suited to the taste of the times. Rise of this society. A description of a monastery, with an account of its members, and of some of its rules.* Page 149

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL's *master arrives at the monastery. The manner of his being admitted into the society. Character of his competitor. The method he took to revenge the society's injustice in preferring* CHRYSAL's *master to him. The mirth of the company disturbed by the entrance of* THE DEVIL, *just as he was invoked by* CHRYSAL's *master. The effect of such a visitor upon the company. The* DEVIL *fixes upon* CHRYSAL's *master in particular, and makes him squeak.* 153

CHAP. XIX.

The DEVIL *is degraded to a* BABOON, *and his appearance well accounted for, which restores the mirth and courage of the company, and particularly of* CHRYSAL's *master, who exerts himself to recover his character. The appearance of the be-deviled* BABOON *is traced next day to his introducer, who at the instance of* CHRYSAL's *master is expelled the society for presuming to ridicule their rites. Farther consequences of this affair make the superior break up his monastery, and build a church.* 157

CHAP. XX.

A farther account of the rules of the convent; with some striking instances of œconomy. A seeming inconsistency accounted for, from a principle not sufficiently understood. Some remarkable effects of vanity. Reason of the abuse of wealth. 161

CHAP. XXI.

Account of the members of the society. The history of the superior. The particular qualifications by which he arose in life. Success in a private instance encourages him

CHAP. III.

CHRYSAL *describes his master's habitation and family. He makes an uncommon progress. The manner in which he found the females of his household engaged. Remarks on* FINERY. *Account of their amusements, with the manner in which they usually ended. The method by which* CHRYSAL'S *master kept peace in his family.* Page 97

CHAP. IV.

CHRYSAL'S *master is honourably rewarded for his services. An unexpected meeting with one of his country-women, introduces an uncommon remark on a common matter. The lady gives an odd instance of conjugal love; and refuses the civil offer of* CHRYSAL'S *master, for a natural reason.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.* 102

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL'S *mistress gives some striking instances of female consistency. She is cured of her grief, by a person of accomplishments as extraordinary as her own. The advantage of comparative excellence.* CHRYSAL'S *mistress marries, and he changes his service for that of an old master.* 107

CHAP. VI.

CHRYSAL *arrives in* ENGLAND. *His master is saluted by a sight not very pleasing. The history of the unfortunate hero of the day opens some mysterious scenes.* THE OBVIOUS USE OF COUNCILS OF WAR. 110

CHAP. VII.

Continued. Consequence of the foregoing conduct. An extraordinary sentence attempted to be reversed in an extraordinary manner, and by as extraordinary persons. The reason of this; and why it miscarried. More mysteries. Just fate of the BUNGLERS, *who left their poor* TOOL *in the lurch; with the consequences of this affair to a certain corps.* 113

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

CHRYSAL *changes his service. He gets a view of a court of* CIVIL JUDICATURE, *on an extraordinary occasion. Some reflections out of the common cant on the delays of the law. A whimsical application of an old story produces the strange effects of putting a counsellor out of countenance. The necessity of absolute power in some government; with a common decision, by which nothing is decided.* Page 118

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL's *master joins a remarkable set of company. Their characters.* CHRYSAL *changes his service. Account of the enterprize on which his late master's companions were going; with the convincing arguments they used to procure obedience to their commands.* 122

CHAP. X.

The ruinous appearance of the scene of action supplies matter for mirth to those whose trade it is to laugh at every thing. The point carried against law and reason. Enquiry into the cause of this. The rise of the prejudice against the profession of an actor. 125

CHAP. XI.

Continued. The common consequences of excess of zeal. The professed intent of theatrical representations defeated by this absurd prejudice against actors. The vices against which this prejudice is levelled, in reality the effects of it; with the means of remedying this and other abuses. 128

CHAP. XII.

The system of policy by which CHRYSAL's *master governed his state. Account of his method of parrying poets. The reason why so few new plays are acted. Enquiry into the present state of genius. The general motives for writing plays preclude them from success. Managers and poets equally in fault in their dealings with each other.* 131

him to try his talents in an higher ſphere, from which he ſoon deſcends with diſgrace. A ſtriking inconſiſtency in his character. Page 164

CHAP XXII.

Continuation of the hiſtory of the ſuperior. The inconſiſtency of his character accounted for. The reaſon of his being ſent early to travel for education. Political principles all neceſſary to be attended to, in a tutor. The method and effect of his tutor's care to inſtruct him in Religion. A frightful ſtory gives riſe to a frightful dream, which is interrupted ſtill more frightfully. A tremendous apparition terrifies him into a ſwoon. Account of the apparition. 167

CHAP. XXIII.

Continuation. Behaviour of the tutor on finding his pupil in a ſwoon. He recovers; and terrifies his tutor by miſtaking him for a ſaint. Charity begins at home. The tutor ſagaciouſly gueſſes, at the meaning of the miſtake; and piouſly reſolves to improve it. The pupil's full and true account of the apparition, with the tutor's honeſt addition to it. His repentance, and converſion. His tutor moderates his zeal for weighty reaſons. He relapſes; and his tutor for private reaſons divulges the whole affair. The method he took to invalidate the ſtory. 170

CHAP. XXIV.

Account of the members continued. Hiſtory of one who turned libertine, in ſpeculation, after he had loſt the power of being ſo in practice. How this happened; the force of literary vanity; and the reaſon why it is ſtronger than any other. Inſtances of the advantages reaped from encouraging genius. A new method of flattery is ſucceſsful where all others had failed, and by a maſter-ſtroke makes vanity gain a ſignal triumph over virtue. 175

CHRYSAL:

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

VOLUME THE THIRD.

CHAP. I.

Introduction. CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice. His maſter finds an ingenious excuſe for returning home; but is unexpectedly ſtopt ſhort by the way. In the common courſe of buſineſs* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice. Character of his new maſter.*

(*THERE being a war between* SPAIN *and* ENGLAND, CHRYSAL *in the ſhape of a* DOUBLOON *is preſented by a* SPANISH *governor to the captain of an* ENGLISH *man of war cruiſing off the coaſt of* MEXICO, *in return for his quitting his ſtation to give him an opportunity of ſending the treaſure to* EUROPE.)

'As

When I entered into the poſſeſſion of my new maſter, he was lolling in a liſtleſs manner on a ſofa, in his *ſtate-room*, where every art was exerted to counteract nature, and elude the mid-day heat, in one of the fierceſt climates of the Torrid Zone. A gown of thinneſt ſilk hung looſely over his large limbs; the radiance of the Sun was ſoftened by ſhades of linen drawn before the open windows, and kept conſtantly wet to cool the air as it entered through them; and every diſagreeable ſavour was drowned in the moſt delicate perfumes.

The contraſt between ſuch magnificent luxury, and the condition of thoſe, whoſe numbers made his ſtrength, ſhewed in the moſt glaring light the infatuation of vanity, in diſplaying ſuch temptations to its own deſtruction, as the moſt implicit obedience to laws could hardly be ſuppoſed proof to.

The awkwardneſs with which my maſter bore his ſtate ſhewing, that it was not natural to him, I looked back to his paſt life to ſee by what illuſtrious actions he had riſen to ſuch an exalted ſtation; but to my ſurprize diſcovered that the foundation of his fortune had been no more than a *phlegmatic indolence*, and *ſervility of ſoul*, which induced his ſuperiors to entruſt power in his hands, without apprehenſion of its raiſing him to a conſequence that might claſh with their deſigns on any future occaſion.

I ſee you are aſtoniſhed that a perſon of ſuch a turn ſhould ever engage in active ſcenes, or be entruſted with the conduct of an enterprize ſo oppoſite to his diſpoſition, as to make ſucceſs improbable. To unexperienc'd reaſon ſuch things muſt ſeem unaccountable; but the leaſt acquaintance with the ways of man, would ſoon reconcile you to greater abſurdities. The convenience of the parent, not the genius of the child, is in general the only thing conſider'd in the choice of a profeſſion on which the ſucceſs of life depends; and this is the reaſon why ſo few are eminent in things ſo eaſy to be eminent in; and when at length a perſon may have it in his power to quit a profeſſion which he did not chuſe, it is too late for him to chuſe another.

another, and therefore he plods on with habitual indifference, not knowing what elſe to do with himſelf.

This may remove your ſurprize as far as it concerns my maſter's firſt entering into, and continuing in ſuch a way of life. As to his fitneſs for ſo difficult and important a command, that was the thing leaſt thought of, when it was entruſted to him. The inſignificancy of his character, and his ſervility to his ſuperiors, pointed him out as the perſon proper for their purpoſe, as they not only made them ſecure that he would not go beyond their orders, but would alſo put it in their power to arrogate to themſelves the merit of ſucceſs, or lay the blame of miſcarriage upon him; and for theſe great qualifications only did they chuſe him on this occaſion to execute *the deſign of another*, who had been guilty of the unpardonable crime of ſhewing that he knew more than themſelves, and whoſe penetration and activity of ſoul might too probably have made him ſee through their deſigns, and puſh matters farther than was conſiſtent with them.

CHAP. II.

Motives of the enterprize in which CHRYSAL's *maſter was engaged. In a private conference between him and his agent, ſome curious ſecrets, in a buſineſs not generally underſtood, are laid open, and a ſeeming contradiction naturally reconciled.*

WHENEVER *England* is at war with any of her neighbours, the effects are felt to the extremities of the globe. The armament which my maſter now commanded was ſent againſt one of the moſt important and wealthieſt ſettlements of the *Spaniards* in that part of the world, not indeed with an ambitious deſign of annexing it to the ſtate, or reimburſing any part of the expences of the war, but merely to diſtreſs the enemy by its deſtruction, and enrich thoſe immediately employed in the conqueſt; the proſpect

'top-gallant-maſt-head, that is when the ſhip *takes a heel!* I'll pull down proud *Spain*, and clap old *England* in its place.'

The ſpirit which my maſter ſhewed in every word and action intereſted me ſo far in his favour, that I was pleaſed at his not having parted with me on this occaſion.

By this time the General and the Captains were come on board, and being ſhewn into the great cabbin, 'Good news, gentlemen,' (ſaid my maſter in extaſy, ſhaking every one of them by the hand as they entered) 'I bring you good news! Yonder is the object of 'our hopes, the place that is to make our fortunes, 'and crown us with glory, if it is not our own faults, 'for the Admiral has given us general orders to pro-'ceed in the beſt manner we can, and without loſing 'time or opportunity in waiting to conſult him on 'every occaſion; ſo that if we fail the fault will be 'entirely ours, as I ſaid before, as alſo will the glory 'of ſucceſs.'

This news filled them all in the higheſt ſpirits. They congratulated each other on a ſucceſs of which they made no doubt; and having concerted the meaſures proper to be taken, returned to their ſhips to carry them into inſtant execution.

CHAP. IV.

A characteriſtick conference between CHRYSAL's *new maſter, and his friend the general. Remarks on war; with the cauſes and conſequences of ſeveral celebrated victories. A motive not commonly attended to, for courage in ſoldiers and ſubaltern officers, accounts politically for ſome apparent wrongs which they ſuffer.*

AS ſoon as the Captains were gone, my maſter turned to the General, for whom he had a particular regard, and embracing him eagerly, 'Now, my 'deareſt

" deareſt friend (ſaid he) you will have an opportunity " not only of gaining ſuch glory, as will add luſtre to " the dignity of your birth, but alſo of acquiring a for- " tune to ſupport that dignity properly. But what is " the matter? You do not ſeem affected at the happy " proſpect! are not you well?"

" Well!" (anſwered the General, ſhrugging up his ſhoulders) " Yes, I am well enough as yet; but " know not how long I ſhall continue ſo, in this damn'd " place, the heat of which ſeems to have ſet you on " fire."

" Damn'd place do you call it?" (replied my maſter, vexed to the ſoul at the manner in which the other ſpoke) " It will be an happy place for you, if " it is not your own fault, a much happier place than " where I ſuppoſe you wiſh to be, *gaming at the coffee-* " *houſe*, or *cracking jeſts for your patron over a bottle.* " But take care! The eyes of all your officers are upon " you, and if they ſhould obſerve this indifference, it " would ruin you for ever. They would directly attri- " bute it to want of ſpirit, on the leaſt ſuſpicion of " which your patron would caſt you off with contempt " and abhorrence, and never intereſt himſelf more in " your behalf; and you know with what difficulties he " obtained this command for you; ſo much indeed, " that gratitude to him ſhould make you exert your- " ſelf if you had no other motive, as he in a manner " ſtaked his character for you. Come! ſtir! You " will be in no danger. Your poſt exempts you from " that. All you have to do is to appear animated, and " alert; and give your orders with fire. Your officers " are to encounter all dangers."

" As for the dangers of war," (returned the Gene- ral, ſtung by the implication by the latter part of what my maſter had ſaid) " I diſregard them as much as " any man. But this damn'd climate is the thing. I " hate the thought of fighting with an inviſible ene- " my, of ſucking in diſeaſes and death with my breath; " and then beſides I hate all trouble ſo much too, that " I would this moment give up the proſpect of glory, " which you ſeem ſo ſtruck with, to be at home ſafe,

" and at my eaſe—But the proſpect of gain! Would you
" give up that too? I have often heard you paſſionately
" lament your want of a fortune ſuitable to your rank,
" and now you have it in your power to acquire it.
" But if you miſs this opportunity"——

" May I never get another!——No! No! I ſhall
" hardly give up that! I will not neglect any thing in
" my power to acquire a fortune! But what did you
" mean juſt now, by ſaying you'd go yourſelf in your
" long-boat to head the men! Sure that is not neceſ-
" ſary."——

" Aye! And you muſt go too for this time! There
" is no poſſibility of diſpenſing with it. But this will
" be the only night you need ſtay on ſhore, or expoſe
" yourſelf to any danger. You may go on board every
" night after this, and ſleep in quiet and ſafety; for
" there will be little or no danger by day. All the work
" muſt be done by night."—

" My deareſt friend, and if I may, I will. It is
" but ſaying that the night air does not agree with me,
" and no one will dare to mutter a word to the con-
" trary."——

" Come then! let us move! The men will do their
" duty with double ſpirits, when they ſee us in earneſt.
" I am as deſirous of making and enjoying a fortune as
" you can be; but would make it with as much credit
" as poſſible though; and to convince you that I con-
" ſult your credit alſo, your couſin ſhall go with me,
" and give out whatever orders I ſee proper, as if they
" came immediately from you. Only do not you betray
" the contrary by your inattention. Conſider what im-
" menſe treaſure there is in the place, and what a noble
" ſhare of it will fall to you."—

" Aye! Aye! Let us but once come to ſharing the
" plunder, and I'll engage to be as alert and attentive
" as the beſt of you all. Never fear me at that work.
" No one ſhall get the ſtart of me there. As you ſay
" I muſt ſtay on ſhore to night though, I'll juſt ſee
" my *night dreſs* put up ready, to take with me,
" with a *febrifuge*, two or three *juleps*, and ſome
" *ptiſane* to guard againſt the worſt, and then I'll be
" with you; though I wiſh it were poſſible for me

" to

" to avoid going on ſhore this night! There will be ſuch " hurry and confuſion in landing the men, that I ſhall " unavoidably put myſelf in an heat, and that is very " dangerous in the night-air; but I'll take a purge in the " morning to carry it off."—

" Prithee don't think of ſuch things now. Your " officers all expect you, and it is time you were with " them, ſo remember the conſequence, and exert " yourſelf with ſpirit. The ſucceſs of this affair will " enable you to ſpend the reſt of your life as you " pleaſe."—

CHAP. V.

An officer deſires to ſpeak with the general, the mention of whom introduces a remarkable inſtance of ignorance of the world. Anecdotes of the officer; with the bad conſequences of a ſubaltern's attempting to diſtinguiſh himſelf in the army.

MY maſter then embraced his friend, and each was juſt going to attend the buſineſs of his ſeparate department, when a ſubaltern officer, in one of the regiments under the General's command, deſired to ſpeak with him directly on matters of the moſt earneſt importance.

At the mention of the officer's name, the General ſhewed the ſtrongeſt diſguſt. " Damn that meddling " fellow (ſaid he peeviſhly) what would he be at " now? I ſuppoſe this is one of his romantick ſchemes " to *diſtinguiſh himſelf!* I am not at leiſure; let him " wait."

" Pray who is this?" (ſaid my maſter, not a little ſurprized at the manner in which the General ſpoke) " And what ſcheme can he propoſe, that ſhould give " you ſuch offence?"

" He is an hot-headed, ignorant fellow; (anſwered " the General) who knows ſo little of the world, as " to think of riſing in the army, by his merit, as he

" calls it; and for that purpoſe, not content with " doing his duty, is always ſeeking unneceſſary dan- " gers, in order forſooth *to diſtinguiſh* himſelf, though " his own experience, as well as general obſervation, " might long ſince have convinced him of the folly of " ſuch a ſcheme, as he never has been in any action, " in which he has not found means to make himſelf " remarkable; and ſtill ſo far from riſing, he has had " the mortification to ſee himſelf evidently ſlighted, " and younger officers daily put over his head, for " no other reaſon, but becauſe they behaved in a leſs " offenſive manner."

—" I don't underſtand you. What offence can poſ- " ſibly be taken, at a man's ſtriving to diſtinguiſh him- " ſelf in a profeſſion, where emulation is in a manner " eſſential to ſucceſs?"

—" Perhaps it may in the navy! But ſhew me, " if you can, one inſtance in the army of a man's " riſing by that kind of merit! No! no! our rule is " directly the contrary. A ſubaltern's attempting to " diſtinguiſh himſelf is an affront to his ſuperiors, not " to be forgiven, as it implies a ſaucy deſign of " putting himſelf into competition with them, for " the good opinion of the publick; and therefore ſuch " attempts are always diſcountenanced. If it were " otherwiſe, no man of fortune or intereſt would ever " enter into the army, as he could not think of enjoy- " ing his eaſe, or ſhewing a prudent regard to his " ſafety, on any occaſion, without being liable to " be expoſed to diſgraceful compariſons, by the im- " pertinent aſſiduity, or raſhneſs of every hot headed, " or beggarly fellow, who has no way of being able " to live, but by ſhewing his diſregard for life, and " all its pleaſures. Indeed poverty may poſſibly ſeem " to be ſome excuſe, for ſuch behaviour; but this " man has not that to plead. He is above want, and " acts in this manner merely from an ambitious, tur- " bulent ſpirit, that muſt be kept under. You ſeem " ſurprized at what I ſay; but I'll give you an in- " ſtance or two of the effects of this very man's " paſſion for *diſtinguiſhing himſelf*, in more ways than " one, which will convince you of the neceſſity of a

" General's

" General's ſuppreſſing every tendency to emulation of " that kind in the army.

" In our laſt attempt upon the coaſt of *Spain*, a " young gentleman of family and fortune took a whim " to go as a volunteer with the General, merely to " indulge curioſity, and have ſomething to talk of " among the ladies, on his return. As they were " on their voyage, the gentleman unluckily happened " to fall into company, with this officer, who on " hearing him talk away careleſsly, in the confidence " of his great fortune, had the aſſurance to tell him, " that courage did not conſiſt in words; but that " when they ſhould meet the enemy, he himſelf would " give him an opportunity of proving his, by keeping " him company.

" The gentleman, never conſidering that his ſitua- " tion in life raiſed him above emulation with one ſo " much below him, thought ſuch a challenge could " not be refuſed; and accordingly the day that our " troops were beat off, in his way to the ſea-ſide un- " luckily meeting this man, who with his uſual deſign " of *diſtinguiſhing himſelf*, had officiouſly drawn up " the company to which he belonged, and which " he had ſo endeared himſelf to by a mean attention " to relieving their wants, when not occaſioned by " their own faults, that they would follow him any " where; and made a ſtand in a place of ſuch danger " that no one but himſelf, would have thought of " taking poſt there, in order to cover the embark- " ation of ſuch as could eſcape; and remembering " what had paſſed between them on board, would " needs ſtop with him, where he was killed by the ve- " ry firſt fire of the enemy, as it was the greateſt odds, " but every one of them muſt have been, unſupported " as they were; though it appeared afterwards, that " had the general poſted a proper force in that very " place at firſt, or even reinforced him, the retreat " might have been made regularly, and the greateſt " part of the heavy loſs which he ſuffered, ſaved. " But that was no buſineſs of this man's; and it was " the higheſt impudence in one of his ſtation, to take

" ſuch a ſtep, without orders, as muſt neceſſarily ex-
" poſe the neglect of his General, and draw diſgrace up-
" on him; for which reaſon any General would rather
" even loſe a battle, than owe it to ſuch means,
" as muſt take away the credit of it from him, in that
" manner."

CHAP. VI.

Continued The Officer acquits himſelf of the imputation of ingratitude by a piece of fooliſh generoſity. He perſuades the ſoldier, who had ſaved his life, to quit the army, for an uncommon reaſon. The conſequences of ſuch conduct, with an hint of the beſt qualifications for riſing in the army.

" NOR was this the only inſtance in which this
" man's paſſion for *diſtinguiſhing himſelf*, was
" attended with diſagreeable conſequences on that occa-
" ſion.

" As he was ſwimming to the boats, (for he had
" ſtaid ſo long to cover the eſcape of others, that
" when the remains of his little party was at length
" broke by the whole body of the enemy's army, and
" driven to the ſea-ſide, there was not a boat near to
" take them off, ſo that he had no other way of eſ-
" caping himſelf, but by plunging into the ſea, and
" ſwimming after them) he was ſo encumbered with
" his cloaths, that he was in the greateſt danger of
" being drowned, which one of his men, who ſwam
" better, happening to perceive, and knowing by his
" dreſs that he was an officer, he ſaved him, without
" diſtinguiſhing in the confuſion of ſuch a ſituation, who
" he was.

" As ſoon as the officer came to himſelf in the
" boat, (for he was ſo near being drowned as to have
" loſt his ſenſes) and underſtood what had happened,
" he turned to the ſoldier and telling him ſlightly,
that it was very well, proceeded to exert himſelf in

" *his*

" *his uſual officious* manner, in ſaving as many others, " who were in the ſame circumſtances, from which " he had juſt eſcaped himſelf, as he could; while all " his ſuperior officers, who had taken care to get off " in time were refreſhing themſelves after their fa- " tigue and fright; without taking any farther notice " of the ſoldier who had ſaved him; though every " one thought he ſhould have given the poor fellow a " guinea or two at leaſt, in reward for his good-na- " ture, and failed not to rail at him loudly for neglect- " ing it.

" Beſides the pitifulneſs and ingratitude of ſuch " behaviour, there was another circumſtance that " made it look ſtill worſe, which was that he had had " this very ſoldier ſeverely puniſhed for ſome fault, " juſt before they had embarked on this expedition, " ſo that it appeared like perſiſting in perſonal malice " to him. For he is not ſatisfied with diſtinguiſhing " himſelf only in time of action. Even before the " war was thought of, his attention to diſcipline gave " equal offence, as it put every officer in the regiment " to the trouble of minding matters, which otherwiſe " they ſhould never have thought about, in order to " avoid impertinent compariſons.

" But all the railing of the men and reflections of " the officers had no effect upon him He minded his " buſineſs with his uſual aſſiduity and ſtrictneſs, nor " ever ſeemed to think of what had happened during " the whole voyage home.

" But this was only affectation, to make what he in- " tended to do the more remarkable. As ſoon as the " troops were landed in *England*, he ordered the ſoldier " to come one morning to his quarters, and bring his " wife with him.

" The common motive for ſuch orders was far from " raiſing him in the opinion of any who heard of it. " However many ſimilar inſtances convincing the ſol- " dier that he muſt obey, they went accordingly; " where after a few common queſtions," " I have " ſent for you, brother ſoldier, (ſaid the officer) to " make you ſome return for the ſervice you did me. " Here is your diſcharge from the regiment. You

" were bred to a good trade, and have had time to be " cool'd from the follies, which firſt made you liſt in " the army; and your wife is an induſtrious honeſt wo- " man, ſo that there is no danger but you may do very " well in your buſineſs, to ſet you up in which here is " an hundred pounds; and ſo take care of yourſelf, and " God bleſs you."

" Sir! Sir! noble Sir!" (ſaid the ſoldier, overcome with ſuch unexpected generoſity) " I humbly thank " your honour; but why my diſcharge? I'll never quit " you. I'll live and die with you! I'll follow your ho- " nour to the mouth of a cannon. I don't deſire my " diſcharge."——

" I don't believe you do!" (anſwered the officer) " nor do I in the leaſt doubt your bravery. But I " cannot have you under my command. Your " careleſſneſs has often led you into faults, which " have obliged me to puniſh you, as it too probably " may again. Now after the ſervice you have done " me, I never could bear the thought of having you " puniſhed, and I never will have any man under me, " who ſhall eſcape puniſhment, when he commits a " fault that deſerves it; ſo that we muſt part. My " advice to you, as your friend, is to return to your " own country, and follow your buſineſs; and if I ſee " that you make good uſe of what I have now given " you, I ſhall be ready to aſſiſt you farther. But if you " chuſe to continue in the army, any regiment will rea- " dily receive you."

" No!" (replied the fellow ſobbing and blubbering) " no! ſince I muſt not ſtay with you, I will ſerve under " no one elſe.'——

" Now what do you think was the conſequence of " this vanity? Why truly, he *diſtinguiſhed himſelf* ſo " much by it, that no other officer met any reſpect " from the ſoldiers after, who were continually crying " him up for his generoſity, to excite others to follow " his fooliſh example, and throw away their money in " relieving the diſtreſs of a parcel of fellows, whom " they have nothing to do with, and the government " is obliged to take care of, if they were worth any " care, after they are paſt doing farther ſervice.

" But

" But the General ſhewed proper reſentment of " ſuch impertinence, and put an officer younger by " many years, over his head, to reward the pains he " had taken to *diſtinguiſh himſelf*. No! no! that is " not the way to riſe in the army now a days. Where " a man has neither money nor intereſt to puſh him " forward, *being able to ſing a good ſong*, or *pimp* " *well*, or *having a handſome wife*, or *ſiſter*, with a " proper degree of humility and complaiſance, will " avail him more, than all the courage and conduct in " romance."

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL's maſter draws ſome intereſting compariſons between the land and ſea ſervices, which account for the different ſucceſs in them. The officer is admitted, and put under arreſt for attempting to do more than his duty.

IT is remarked that men ſeldom enquire into the cauſes of things continually before their eyes. Habitual acquaintance prevents that curioſity, which is one of the greateſt incentives to knowledge. They have always ſeen ſuch things; and therefore have never enquired how they came to be ſo. My maſter who had long obſerved the fact, but never thought of the cauſe, was at firſt a good deal ſurprized at what his friend ſaid. After ſome pauſe, " I am afraid what " you ſay is too true" (ſaid he) " and I am ſorry for " it. The ſervice would go on much better if it " were otherwiſe, as you ſee *ours* does, many of the " moſt eminent commanders in which have raiſed " themſelves from the very loweſt ſtations, merely by " that kind of merit, which you take ſuch pains to diſ- " courage."——

" That may be ſo" (anſwered the General;) " but " the caſe of *your* ſervice, and *ours* is quite different. " Every captain of a man of war, when on a ſeparate

" cruize, acts as a General in Chief; and even in a " fleet, his force is ſo immediately collected under his " own command, and ſeparated from every other, that " it is in ſome meaſure in the nature of a detachment, " ſo that in both caſes, he has a right to do whatever " he thinks proper, without danger of giving offence to " any one elſe.

" But how ſhould you like to have one of your mid- " ſhipmen, or lieutenants, running every minute to you " with advice, or preſuming to ſtrike out new methods " for working the ſhip in a gale of wind, or fighting her " in time of action?"

" Perhaps not very well, without he had before- " hand ſhewed me the advantage of ſuch new methods, " and then I ſhould moſt readily adopt them, without " ever conſidering whom they came from. But indeed " there is a more eſſential difference between your " ſervice and ours, than that you have taken notice " of, which is that every man muſt be a ſtated time a " ſubaltern (a midſhipman) before he can by any in- " tereſt be promoted to an higher rank; which time " is ſufficient for him to acquire a competent degree " of knowledge in his buſineſs, and which time he " can ſcarcely apply to any thing elſe, as from the " ſituation he muſt be in for the greateſt part of it, " (at ſea) he has nothing elſe, to which he can apply " himſelf; and this, and the ſpirit of emulation, for " the exertion of which their acting ſeparately af- " fords them, as you obſerve, the moſt advantageous " opportunities, may poſſibly be the reaſons, why ſo " many diſtinguiſh themſelves, (if I may uſe the word " without offence!) among us ſo glorioufly, and with " ſuch advantage to their country; while the officers " of the army, for want of due encouragement to " perſonal merit, become diſpirited, and indifferent " to the ſucceſs of a ſervice, in which they have " no hopes of riſing, by any means in their own " power."

" A ſevere remarker might perhaps account for this " diſcouragement to emulation, and neglect of perſonal " merit in the army, from motives not much to the " credit of the commanders, and ſay that, *as they had*

" *not*

" *not riſen by ſuch themſelves*, they looked with an in-
" vidious eye upon them, as a reproach to their own
" want of both. Indeed it cannot be juſt to expect,
" that a General, *who has ſpent his life in paying*
" *court to a miniſter, or favourite*, or *who was pre-*
" *ferred only for his intereſt in Parliament*, ſhould un-
" derſtand the *minutiæ* of his duty, and ſee the ne-
" ceſſity of encouraging a merit, the want of which was
" no obſtacle to his own perſerment.—But this is an evil
" beyond our power to redreſs, though, till it is re-
" dreſſed, matters can never go on with that ſucceſs,
" which a contrary conduct would make certain.

" However, I think you had better ſee this gentle-
" man. Perhaps he may have ſomething to inform you
" of, worth your attention. At any rate it is not pro-
" per to throw any damp on courage, at ſuch a time as
" this."

The general, who ſeldom diſputed my maſter's opi-nion, accordingly ordered him to be admitted, and, enquiring what was his buſineſs, " Sir! (ſaid the officer)
" I am come to inform you, that I have diſcovered a
" proper place for landing the troops, which I will un-
" dertake to make good, with only two hundred
" men of the regiment to which I belong, againſt all
" the force of the enemy, if I am permitted to go di-
" rectly, before they have time to throw up any works
" there."——

" You have diſcovered, Sir!" (anſwered the General haughtily) " I do not underſtand you! Pray when did
" you make this notable diſcovery?——

" Juſt now, Sir;" (replied the officer, not in the leaſt diſconcerted at the manner in which the General ſpoke)
" the *tranſport* in which I was, happening to *ſtretch*
" *away a-head*, I got out a boat, and have reconnoitred
" a great part of the coaſt, in the thick of the enemy's
" fire."——

" And pray, who ordered you to reconnoitre in this
" manner?"——

" No one, Sir, I never wait for orders to do
" any thing that I think for the advantage of the ſer-
" vice."——.

" Then,

" Then, Sir, I'll have you to know, that no man un-
" der my command ſhall take upon him to do any thing
" without orders. He is a good man, who does his
" duty; and I deſire no more."——

" But though you may not expreſsly deſire it, Sir, I
" hope it is no perſonal offence to you, for an officer to
" ſtrive to diſtinguiſh himſelf!"

——" *Perſonal offence!*" What do you mean, Sir? I
" do not underſtand you!"

—" I am ſurprized at that, Sir! I think my mean-
" ing pretty plain."——

" Sir, I care not what you think; but I'll make
" you bridle your tongue."——

—" *Bridle my tongue!* That is not in your power,
" Sir; nor perhaps my hands either, at a proper
" time. I will ſay what I know to be juſt; and do
" what I have a right to do, without being brow-
" beaten by any man."——

—" And ſo will I, Sir, do what I have a right
" to do; I will this moment put you in arreſt, for your
" inſolence, and keep you there till you have learned
" how to behave yourſelf more properly to your ſu-
" periors."

The General inſtantly put his threats in execution, ſending him, burſting with indignation at ſuch treatment, under arreſt to the ſhip, to which he belonged.

The converſation between the General and the officer had been carried on ſo rapidly, that my maſter had not any opportunity of interfering. As ſoon as he was gone, " I heartily wiſh (ſaid he dryly) this
" affair had not been carried to ſuch extremity. It
" will have an ugly appearance at this time, and may
" be made very bad uſe of, in caſe of any unforeſeen
" diſappointment."

" Why! why!" (ſaid the General, ſcarce recovered from his paſſion) " How could I help it? Would
" you have me bear to be inſulted, and threatened in
" that manner without ſhewing the reſentment proper
" for my ſtation?"

" By no means! When things had gone ſo far, I
" do not ſee how you could avoid doing what
" you have done. I only wiſh you had treated him at

" firſt

" firſt in another manner; and not provoked him be-
" yond his reaſon. I own I have conceived a favour-
" able opinion of him. He appeared to be actuated
" by true zeal, and ſpoke with the cool firmneſs of a
" ſoldier, till he was put off his guard. To be ſure
" there was a great impropriety in his going to recon-
" noitre in that manner, as it may draw the attention
" of the enemy that way; but then he might have
" been told of that, without treating him with ſuch
" haughtineſs."——

—" Very true! it was very improper! I wiſh I had
" thought of that! But the inſolence of his coming to
" adviſe one, and preſuming to act without orders put
" it out of my head."——

—" What is paſt cannot be helped now; but do not
" do any thing farther to day, and I'll try to make it up
" ſome way to-morrow, before it can be known, or have
" any bad conſequences."——

The friends then parted, though neither quite ſo well ſatisfied with the other as before this affair.

CHAP. VIII.

The affair is made up, by CHRYSAL*'s maſter, on the General's making an apology to the officer, and accounting candidly for what he had done. The officer quits the army, leaving an intereſting piece of inſtruction behind him —Some ſhort but ſtriking ſketches of the progreſs of the enterprize.*

I SEE you are anxious for the fate of this officer. To ſatisfy your curioſity, and avoid being obliged to break the thread of my narrative with the ſequel of this ſtory, at another time, I will give it to you now.

At the inſtance of my maſter, the General ſent the next morning to diſcharge the officer from the arreſt; but he, conſcious of his innocence, and glowing with reſentment for the indignity offered to his honour, re-

fuſed

uſed to ſtir, till his character ſhould be cleared by a court-martial, which he therefore reſolutely demanded as his right.

This embarraſſed the General not a little. However, after ſome days, when the officer's patience was pretty well tried, and the ſevere loſſes ſuſtained in the courſe of the ſiege, made the worth of ſuch men more attended to, my maſter attacked him, on his *foible*, his principles of honour, and zeal for the ſervice of his country, and prevailed on him to return to his duty, on the General's making him an apology, for what had paſſed, which, taking the hint from my maſter, he attributed entirely to his apprehenſion of the enemies being put on their guard by his reconnoitring, ſo as to prevent his landing the troops, at that place, *as he had before deſigned*; and to conceal the diſgrace he had ſuffered, he not only expreſſed this publickly, and treated him with an appearance of uncommon reſpect during the ſiege; but alſo on his return home, to avoid ſome conſequences which might not have been ſo very agreeable to him, when the officer, no longer immediately under his command, made a reſolute demand of *perſonal ſatisfaction*, repeated his former apology in the moſt publick manner, and obliging terms, and effected to uſe his intereſt to get him promoted, but too coolly to ſucceed; ſo univerſal was the offence taken at his preſuming to think of *diſtinguiſhing himſelf*, by a conduct which gave trouble to his equals to imitate, and *reflected diſgrace on his ſuperiors, who had never practiſed the like themſelves*

The conſequence at length was, that after repeated breaches of direct promiſes to do him juſtice, he thought it proper to quit a ſervice, in which he had ſpent the prime of his life with credit, but without advantage, in order to ſhew an honeſt reſentment, and avoid the mortification of meeting farther neglect; leaving behind him this important inſtruction, purchaſed by his dear experience, *that perſonal merit is quite unneceſſary in a ſubaltern officer, and an obſtacle, not an aſſiſtance, to his riſing in the army.*——But to return to my ſtory.

You

You muſt not expect a circumſtantial detail of the progreſs of this enterprize. The operations of war are too confuſed to give pleaſure to reaſon in the repreſentation, too horrid not to give pain to humanity.

I ſee you think this remark too ſevere; but that is the effect of prejudice. When the victories, which have been blazoned higheſt, and reflected the greated glory on thoſe who gained them, are ſtripped of the falſe colourings, laid on only to dazzle and deceive, and examined coolly, moſt of them will be found to have been owing to ſome unforeſeen accident, ſome lucky improvement of a blunder of the enemy, or elſe an obſtinate perſeverance of their own, after every boaſted rule of art has been broken through, every recourſe of judgment exhauſted in vain; and to have been attended by circumſtances of ſuch miſery, and loſs to victors as well as vanquiſhed, as blaſted every glory, and infinitely over-balanced all advantage poſſible to be gained by them. I ſhall therefore barely touch upon ſuch particulars as may ſerve to give a ſketch of the character of thoſe concerned in them.

The ardour ſhewn by the ſubaltern officers and private men, when they received orders for landing, was impoſſible to be accounted for from any other principle, than *diſregard to a life deſtitute of every comfort and convenience that could endear it*; a remark, which to the humane wiſdom of ſome may ſeem to juſtify the deficiency and badneſs of every kind of proviſion made for their ſupport; while thoſe, whoſe moſt exalted rank may be thought to animate them with a ſenſe of honour, and ambitious hope, and who therefore do not want ſuch an incitement to deſperation, enjoy a luxury ſcarce to be reconciled with the confuſion of ſuch an unſettled ſtate.—But to return.

The remainder of that, and all the next day was taken up in making preparations for landing the troops, which was effected under cover of the night, when ſome were drowned in approaching an unknown ſhore in the dark, ſome killed by the enemy, and more by their own men, in the tumult and confuſion of ſuch ſcenes.

In

In the ſame manner was the ſiege of the town carried on, manifold more of the aſſailants falling every hour, by the inclemencies of a climate unnatural to them, and againſt which no proper proviſion had been made, though they had been delayed to meet its fierceſt fury, by diſeaſes cauſed by the badneſs of every neceſſary of life, and above all by the miſconduct of their leaders, than by all the effects of the enemy, all the arts which the ingenuity of man could adviſe for the deſtruction of his own unhappy ſpecies.

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL's *attention is agreeably diverted by the appearance of a young* SPANIARD, *who throws himſelf at the feet of his maſter to prefer an extraordinary requeſt. The Hiſtory of* DON ALPHONSO GUZMAN, *the young* SPANIARD.

I WAS relieved from the pain of attending to ſuch ſcenes of horror, by an affair that ſhewed in a ſtriking light the force of paſſions more natural to the heart of man.

As my maſter, who was the ſoul of the enterprize, was ſtanding one night to ſee the effect of a battery which he had cauſed to be raiſed on an eminence, that commanded a particular quarter to the town; for not content with performing his own duty in his proper ſtation by ſea, he literally fulfilled his promiſe to his friend, the General, and directed the operations by land alſo in his name; a youth, who had made his eſcape from the garriſon, and advanced in the face of all their fire, though ſufficient to terrify any being capable of terror, threw himſelf at his feet in agonies of diſtreſs.

My maſter whoſe heart was warmed with that generous compaſſion, which is inſeparable from true courage, was ſtruck at the ſight, and raiſing him from the

the ground, bade him declare the nature of his diſtreſs, and expect every aſſiſtance to which he was entitled by the ſacred duties of humanity.

Encouraged by theſe words the youth raiſed his head, and fixing his eyes upon my maſter with a look inexpreſſibly ſupplicating, "O ſtop your fire, gracious "Chief," (ſaid he preſſing his lips paſſionately to the hand that had raiſed him, and on which he ſtill hung) "ſtop your fire in that fatal direction, where it can "hurt only innocence and virtue. That building, "againſt which it is levelled, is not a part of the for-"tifications, the deſtruction of which cannot be of any "ſervice to you. It is a convent dedicated to the "*Virgin Mother of God*, and at this time contains all "that my ſoul holds dear, all that is beautiful and vir-"tuous under heaven."

Though his youth, beauty, and diſtreſs intereſted every one preſent in the ſuppliant's favour, the nature of his ſuit muſt neceſſarily have prevented his ſucceſs. But an accident ſaved him from the pain of being refuſed, the powder which was to ſerve the guns ſome how catching fire, and deſtroying the greateſt part of the battery, in the very inſtant he ſpoke.

Not all the horrors of ſuch a ſcene could ſuppreſs the joy he felt at an event ſo favourable to his hopes. "Heaven has interfered!" (exclaimed he, in an exta-"ſy) Heaven has interfered to ſave her; and man will "not preſume to oppoſe its pleaſure."

The enthuſiaſtick manner in which he ſaid this, ſtruck my maſter. "Reſtrain your paſſion for a few "moments, (ſaid he) till I have leiſure to attend more "particularly to you; and then if you can convince "me of the truth of what you ſay, your requeſt ſhall "be complied with. Far be it from me to hurt thoſe "hapleſs votaries of religion. *Britons* ſeek other ob-"jects of their valour."—He then gave the neceſſary orders for preparing the battery, and deſiring the youth to follow him, he went on board his ſhip, where he treated him with every mark of politeneſs and compaſſion.

As

As ſoon as they had taken ſome refreſhment, my maſter made a ſign to every one elſe to retire, and then addreſſing himſelf to the youth in the moſt humane manner, deſired to know who he was, and what motives could have induced him to run into ſuch imminent danger in order to prefer a ſuit, of the ſucceſs of which there was ſo little probability.

The youth for ſome moments hung down his head abaſhed, then with a ſigh that ſeemed to burſt his heart, "It is my duty, moſt gracious Chief," (ſaid he) "to give you the information you require, however "painful the taſk may be to me; eſpecially as your "cond ſcending to liſten to the ſtory of my misfor-"tunes awakes an hope, that you will be moved by "them to grant a requeſt on which depends my life.

"My name is *Alphonſo*. My father, *Don Pedro*, "bears an honourable command in the force which "defend yonder city againſt your arms, but glories "more in the honour of being deſcended from the "noble family of *Guzman*, which has preſerved its "blood pure from every debaſing mixture, ſince the "beginning of time, in the mountains of *Caſtile*, and "produced a race of heroes, whoſe fame has filled the "world.

"When my father arrived at an age fit to bear arms, "as none of the powers of *Europe* dared to provoke "the wrath of *Spain*, diſdaining a life of inglorious "peace, he entered into the forces ſent hither to re-"duce ſuch of the rebellious natives, as ſtill preſumed "to refuſe ſubmiſſion to the monarch of the *Spaniſh* "worlds, where he ſignalized himſelf ſo eminently, that "at the end of ſeven years his merits were rewarded "with a commiſſion, ſigned by the Viceroy himſelf in "the name of the king.

"Such a diſtinguiſhed honour gave weight to the "addreſſes which he had for ſome time paid to the "only daughter of *Don Alonzo Garcia*, who was a na-"tive of *Arragon*, and had been ſent over by the King "to fill the important office of Secretary to the Re-"ceiver of his Revenues.

"From

" From this marriage, ſo honourable to both parties, " I have the happineſs to derive my birth, if it can " be called an happineſs to be born only to misfor- " tunes.

" As I was the ſole hope of two ſuch illuſtrious " houſes, no pains were ſpared to give me an educati- " on ſuitable to my birth; the great exploits of my an- " ceſtors, the antiquity, and untainted nobility of my " blood, were continually repeated to me to excite " emulation, and inſpire me with proper ſentiments of " honour. Such care ſeemed the ſureſt means to pro- " cure happineſs, but the wiſdom of man ſtrives in " vain againſt the decrees of fate.

" In the neighbourhood of my father's houſe, there " lived a merchant named *Don Antonio*, between whoſe " family and ours there was the cloſeſt intimacy; an " intimacy mutually advantageous, the countenance of " a perſon of my father's conſequence being an honour " to his friend, who never omitted thoſe returns of " gratitude, which his wealth often gave him an op- " portunity of making.

" *Don Antonio* had an only daughter, whoſe being " heireſs to his great fortune was the leaſt bleſſing " Heaven had beſtowed upon her! O! my *Olivia*, " ſhall I ever behold you more? May I yet raiſe my " hopes ſo high as to think of calling you mine?"—

At theſe words a flood of tears choaking his utterance, my maſter took the opportunity to go out, and give ſome orders to his officers; and on his return, the youth proceeded.

" *Don Antonio*'s daughter and I being nearly of the " ſame age, the tender connection of infant fondneſs " grew up between us, and improved with our ripen- " ing years. The attention of my father was too " much engroſſed by his military cares to take notice " of our attachment, and my mother was ſo ſenſible of " the many perfections of *Olivia*, that far from diſ- " couraging, ſhe promoted it by every means in her " power, dwelling continually on her praiſes, and " ſuggeſting to me ſuch little offices of affection and

" reſpect

" reſpect as were ſuited to our ages, and moſt likely to " make an impreſſion on her tender heart.

" Nor did the father of *Olivia*, (ſhe had loſt her " mother in her infancy) ſhew any diſſatisfaction at a " paſſion which could not eſcape his notice; influenced " moſt probably by a ſenſe of the honour which he " ſhould derive from ſuch an alliance.

" In this happy ſtate we lived till I entered on my " fifteenth year, when my father thought it proper for " me to learn the art of war, in order to qualify me " for ſuch military promotions as I was entitled to by " my birth, and for that purpoſe gave me notice to " prepare myſelf to march with ſome troops, which " were going to reinforce a garriſon, in the moſt diſtant " part of the kingdom.

" Though my heart glow'd with all the ambition " and deſire of glory, which my noble blood muſt na- " turally inſpire, the thought of being ſeparated from " *Olivia* overbalanced every other conſideration. In " the firſt emotions of my ſoul therefore I threw my- " ſelf at my father's feet, and raſhly own'd my paſſion, " imploring him as he regarded my life to make me " happy in the poſſeſſion of my love, before he at- " tempted parting us, even for a moment.

" It is impoſſible to deſcribe his rage on this un- " happy diſcovery. Spurning me from him with his " foot, " Degenerate wretch!" (ſaid he, when his wrath permitted him to ſpeak) " Degenerate wretch! " to ſtain the honour of your blood, by thinking " of an alliance with the daughter of a perſon, of " whoſe family you have no knowledge!"—(For in all " the intercourſe of intimacy, the father of *Olivia* " had never diſcovered in what part of *Spain* he had " been born; nor could the recital of illuſtrious pedi- " grees, the conſtant topic of diſcourſe among the no- " ble, ever incite him to an emulative mention of his " own.)——Hence! Fly my ſight this moment; " nor ever preſume to appear before me again, till " you have conquered this diſgraceful paſſion."

" I knew

" I knew the inflexibility of my father's temper too " well to attempt making any reply, even would the " fullneſs of my heart have permitted me. I retired " therefore without ſpeaking a word, and going to my " mother, informed her of my diſtreſs, which ſhe " ſtrove to alleviate by every expreſſion of tenderneſs " and conſolation, promiſing to exert all her influence, " as ſoon as the firſt heat of his wrath ſhould be allay- " ed, to prevail upon him to conſent to my ſuit."

CHAP. X.

Continued. OLIVIA's *father is taken up by the inquiſition, and herſelf put into a convent, on an* ENGLISH *battery's firing, upon which,* DON ALPHONSO *comes in deſpair to* CHRYSAL's *maſter to make a very odd requeſt, which he grants at length, and alſo promiſes him his aſſiſtance to obtain his miſtreſs.*

" THOUGH I received ſome encouragement " from theſe aſſurances, I could not forbear " going in the boding of my heart, to acquaint *Olivia* " with what had happened, but in the moſt delicate " terms. Her affliction was not leſs than mine. She " ſaw the ſincerity of my love, and in the tenderneſs " of ſuch a ſcene yielded to my entreaties, and plight- " ed her faith to me by the moſt ſacred vows.

" Comforted by the thought that ſhe could not now " be torn from me, I returned home, where I found " my mother fulfilling her promiſe, and pleading with " my father in my behalf. As their earneſtneſs made " them ſpeak aloud, I could not reſiſt the natural de- " ſire of liſtening to a debate of ſuch importance to " my hopes. She urged with all the ſtrength of rea- " ſon, the abſurdity of thinking a family diſhonour- " ed by the admiſſion of a female, and enforced her " arguments with the examples even of Sovereigns; " ſhe inſiſted on the beauty, virtue, and fortune of

" *Olivia,*

" ſeized the unhappy man, and hurrying him away " to their own priſon, took poſſeſſion of all his wealth, " and forced his helpleſs daughter into yonder convent.

" This misfortune, which deprived me of the " wretch's pooreſt conſolation, the liberty of complain- " ing, drove me to deſpair. I pined in ſilence; and was " beginning to meditate on laying down a life, that was " become a burden to me, when my father calling me " to him one morning, the time is come!" (ſaid he ſmi- ling fiercely) " that will prove the blood of *Guzman*. " The evil genius of the *Engliſh* has prompted them " to come, and ſeek their deaths here. The moſt no- " ble Governor has not only promoted me this day to " the command of a company in the forces deſtined for " the defence of this city, but alſo in reſpect to " my family, has appointed you to be my lieutenant. " Let this arouſe you to a ſenſe of yourſelf! Conſider " what you owe to your country, and to your name! " Every feeble paſſion flies at the manly voice of war."

" Languid as my ſoul was, I could not hear this " news, without joy, eſpecially as it opened me a " proſpect of meeting honourably that death, which " was now my only hope. Accordingly, as ſoon as the " enemy appeared, I courted danger with ſuch eager- " neſs, that my father in ſpite of all his magnanimity " more than once deſired me to reſtrain a courage that " aroſe to an exceſs.

" But even death itſelf is deaf to the wretch's call. " Nothing material happened to me, till the battery, " to which I came to you, opened upon the convent, " when the thought of my *Olivia*'s danger of being " buried in its ruins drove me to madneſs. I inſtantly " flew thither, and imagining that ſuch circumſtances " bore down all regard to rules calculated for times of " peace, demanded entrance to convey the inhabitants " to ſome place of ſafety: But what was my aſtoniſh- " ment to hear, the Governor had given the ſtricteſt " orders, that not a ſoul ſhould be admitted to ſtir, " committing to the immediate hand of Heaven the " protection of its peculiar votaries.

" Such inhumanity, for I can call it by no milder " name, broke every bond of duty and allegiance. I

" abdured

" abjured all farther connection with ſo cruelly inſen-
" ſible a monſter; and recollecting the many exalted
" inſtances of true generoſity which the unhappy father
" of *Olivia* had told me of the *Engliſh*, I reſolved to
" apply myſelf to them, and try whether I could not
" obtain that ſafety for the beloved of my ſoul, which
" I could not hope from him, whoſe duty it was to
" protect her.

" This, moſt illuſtrious Chief, is the ſtory of my
" misfortunes; the cauſe of that conduct which ap-
" peared ſo ſtrange to you. If you grant my ſuit, you
" will be amply rewarded by the conſcious approbati-
" on of your own mind. You will merit the bleſſing
" of Heaven on your undertakings, by ſparing the moſt
" perfect of its works! And may I preſume to add!
" You will attach to you an heart that is incapable of
" deceit! Through every viciſſitude of life will I at-
" tend your ſteps, the faithful ſervant of your fate."

The brightneſs of truth breaks through every cloud, and forces conviction. " I grant your requeſt;" (ſaid my maſter with a ſmile of conſolation and encouragement) " The convent ſhall be ſpared. Nor is that all. " If ſucceſs crowns my hopes, I will alſo uſe every " means in my power to reſtore your *Olivia* to your " arms."

The joy which the youth felt on hearing theſe words, is not to be deſcribed. " O generous *Engliſhman!*" (ſaid he throwing himſelf at my maſter's feet once more, and kiſſing them in rapture) " You muſt ſucceed! " Heaven will proſper every enterprize conducted with " ſuch virtue."

CHAP. XI.

The fortunate effect of CHRYSAL'*s maſter's ſparing the convent. The mutual advantages to victors and vanquiſhed of articles of capitulation. The only buſineſs of a general.* CHRYSAL'*s maſter performs his promiſe to* ALPHONSO, *into whoſe ſervice* CHRYSAL *enters.* ALPHONSO *recovers his miſtreſs, whoſe father is ſet at liberty by a piece of* FUN *of ſome* ENGLISH *Sailors. Concluſion of the ſtory of* ALPHONSO. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

ACCORDING to his promiſe, the next night when the battery was repaired, my maſter gave orders to direct the fire another way, where he ſoon found the reward of his generoſity, one of the firſt bombs which was thrown ſetting fire to the principal magazine in the whole city, the blowing up of which overturned a conſiderable part of the fortifications.

Animated by this ſucceſs to a degree of phrenſy, the beſiegers puſhed on their attacks with ſuch irreſiſtible fury, under the directions of my maſter, (whoſe impetuoſity bore down all obſtacles, and made amends though at a dear expence of blood, as well for his own ignorance in a ſpecies of war foreign to that which he had been bred, as for that of thoſe whoſe particular buſineſs it was) that *in ſpite of the accumulated havock of war, and diſeaſe, of want, and blunders worſe than all,* they at length overcame the obſtinacy of the beſieged, and compelled them to propoſe delivering up the city on terms, the eſtabliſhing of which was readily agreed to, as *they ſaved the plunder from the ſoldiers for the victorious commanders*; at the ſame time that they protected the perſons of the vanquiſhed from licentious outrage.

The moment the garriſon offered to capitulate, my maſter flew with the news to his friend the General, and embracing him in a tranſport of joy, "At length "(ſaid

" (ſaid he) the moment is come, that makes our for-
" tunes for ever. The city is our own. Go; and exert
" the plenitude of your authority, in making ſuch
" terms as ſhall enable us to ſupport the dignity of our
" birth and rank, without being any longer obliged to
" languiſh in ſlaviſh dependence on miniſterial favour."

" That I will!" (anſwered the General) that I will,
" my deareſt friend! Doubt not my acquitting myſelf,
" properly of the pleaſing taſk! I have been long pre-
" pared for it. It was the ſole motive of my ſolicit-
" ing the command, nor has any thing elſe entered
" into my thoughts ſince I obtained it, but making
" terms, and dividing the ſpoil; that is *deviſing how*
" *to ſwell our own ſhares upon the diviſion.* I have cal-
" culated every thing to the greateſt nicety, and will
" ſhew you ſuch ſtrokes as ſhall ſurprize you. *The*
" *only buſineſs of a General is to calculate contributions,*
" *and divide plunder.*"

Though my maſter was ſufficiently eager to acquire wealth, he could not approve of the profeſſion of ſuch ſentiments. He haſted away therefore, without making any reply, to the place of action, to be ready in caſe of any accident, never thinking he had done any thing, while any thing remained for him to do.

Much as ſuch ſcenes engroſſed his attention, he did not forget his promiſe to the *Spaniſh* youth, but order-ing him a guard of ſoldiers, bade him go, as ſoon as the gates ſhould be delivered up, and ſecure the convent where his *Olivia* was confined, from any accident which might happen on ſuch an occaſion in ſpite of all their care, giving him at the ſame time a purſe of gold, *in which I was*, to anſwer any preſent neceſſities, with directions to apply to him again, if he ſhould have any farther need of his aſſiſtance.

My new maſter did not want to have ſuch a com-miſſion repeated. He kiſſed the hand of his benefactor in a rapture of gratitude, and encouraging the guard aſſigned him with the moſt liberal promiſes, flew, the moment the gates of the city were open'd, to the convent, and demanded his *Olivia* with the peremptory voice of a conqueror, where the ſight of the guard

removed every objection, and ſhe was inſtantly delivered to him.

The meeting of theſe young lovers was moſt affecting. They flew into each other's arms, and embracing in extaſy too big for utterance, gave vent to the fullneſs of their hearts by a flood of tears.

Recovering himſelf at length, "Come, my *Olivia*," (ſaid *Alphonſo*, taking her hand) "let us leave this "place. Let us go"—

"O whither" (interrupted ſhe, ſtaring wildly) "Whither ſhall I go? I have no home;—no father to "receive me."—

"My home is yours; (anſwered *Alphonſo*, embracing her moſt tenderly) "We will go to the houſe of "my father, who cannot perſiſt in his cruelty, when "he is informed how ſignally Heaven has interfered "in our favour, and there we will conſult of the "means proper for procuring the deliverance of *Antonio*. I have a protector among the conquerors, the "moſt generous of mankind, who will not refuſe his "aſſiſtance on ſuch an occaſion."

Theſe words comforted *Olivia* with an hope, for the accompliſhment of which though ſhe was indebted to another cauſe.

The way from the convent to the houſe of *Alphonſo*'s father leading them by the priſon of the Inquiſition, *Olivia* was ſo affected with the ſight of it, that ſhe ſwooned away in the arms of *Alphonſo*. Such an accident naturally threw the whole company into an embarraſſment, while they were in the midſt of which, a body of *Engliſh* ſeamen, who had ſlipt away from their officers, and were roving about merely from curioſity, and without intention of doing miſchief, but ready to join with any that ſhould fall in their way, happening to come by, no ſooner underſtood from the guard what was the matter, than looking at each other for ſome moments as if waiting for the word of command, at length one of them cried out, "Hallo, boys! What "ſay you? Shall we bail the gentlewoman's father? "May-hap there may be ſome of our countrymen in "the bilboes along with him; Damn my eyes and "limbs,

" limbs, but it would be good *fun*, to ſet them all free;
" I fancy the Inquiſitors will not refuſe our bail; if
" they do, I ſhould be glad to pick a quarrel with
" them: I hate them mortally ever ſince I ſaw them
" roaſt ſome poor *Smouchers* at *Liſbon*, becauſe they
" would not eat pork. Come! chear away, my hearts
" of oak All hands aloft, and to work."

Theſe words were like fire given to a mine. He had ſcarce finiſhed, when the thoughtleſs creature without more ado ran to the priſon, and while ſome of them were forcing in the gates, the reſt mounting on each other's ſhoulders climbed over the walls.

The moment *Olivia*, now recovered from her ſwoon, ſaw the priſon open, " Now is the time, *Alphonſo!*" (ſaid ſhe) " Now is the time to ſet my father free."—

The hint was ſufficient. *Alphonſo* turned directly to the guard, and perceiving by their looks, that they were willing to aſſiſt him, " I go, my love!" (ſaid he) " But where ſhall I leave you in ſafety till I return? ſuch " a place cannot be fit for your delicacy."

" Speak not of leaving me!" (interrupted ſhe eager-" ly) I will go with you! No delicacy ſhall interfere " with ſuch a duty."——

On her ſaying this, they all entered the priſon, where the ſeamen were ſhouting, and ſkipping about like ſo many wild creatures, and ſetting all the priſoners at liberty, wherever they went.

The ſecrets of this priſon houſe are too horrid for deſcription. I ſhall therefore draw a veil over them at this time, eſpecially as another occaſion will lead me into the ſame ſcene again, when the repreſentation will be more intereſting

No words can convey an idea of the tenderneſs of the meeting between *Olivia*, and her father, whom *Alphonſo* and ſhe readily found out. As ſoon as they had indulged the firſt tranſports of their joy, ſhe informed him briefly how much they were indebted to *Alphonſo*, for their preſent happineſs. Though her father was not at a loſs for the motive of ſuch generoſity, he thought it not proper to take notice of it at that time. He embraced him tenderly, and beſought Heaven to reward his virtue.

" The happineſs of ſerving thoſe moſt dear to us," (ſaid *Alphonſo*, who had not the ſame command of his temper) " is its own reward. *Olivia* and her father " have a right to every thing in my power. But let us " leave this place, the ſight of which appals my ſoul. " Let us go to the houſe of my father."——

" Lead on, my children! (anſwered *Olivia*'s father) " I follow willingly; and not without hope of recon- " ciling my friend to our general happineſs."

When they went out of the priſon, they found the ſailors employed in executing a piece of juſtice exactly in their character. They had rambled all through the priſon, without doing or deſigning miſchief, till they came to the chamber in which were kept the inſtruments of torture, the ſight of which incenſed them to ſuch a degree, that they inſtantly reſolved to make the Inquiſitors themſelves feel the force of them in their turn; but they, apprehenſive of what might happen, had prudently made their eſcape by a ſecret paſſage, as ſoon as the priſon had been forced. Diſappointed thus in their deſign, the ſailors took all the horrid apparatus, with the habits, enſigns, books, *&c.* of the office, and piling them up in the court, ſet fire to the heap, concluding the exploit with three cheers for the honour of old *England*; after which they marched off in queſt of more *fun*, as unconcerned as if nothing had happened.

When *Alphonſo* arrived at his father's houſe, he found his mother juſt ſinking under the weight of affliction. On hearing his voice, ſhe ſtarted up, and running to him, " O my ſon! my ſon!" (exclaimed ſhe, claſping him in her arms, and leaning her head upon his boſom) " Heaven has heard my prayers! I am not " childleſs, tho' I am a widow." " A widow!" (exclaimed *Alphonſo*) " Forbid it, Heaven! O my fa- " ther!"——

" Yes, *Alphonſo!*" (continued ſhe, raiſing her head from his boſom, which ſhe had bedew'd with her tears) " Your father died, as he lived, with honour, fight- " ing valiantly by the ſide of his General, in defence " of his country. But what do I ſee?" (caſting her eyes upon *Olivia*, her father, and the guard, whom her

her ſurprize had prevented her taking notice of before) " *Olivia! Antonio!*——And who are theſe ſtrange " men?—But alas, I know too well!——O! my ſon, " art thou then a priſoner to the enemies, who ſlew thy " father—Am I to loſe thee again, the moment thou " art returned?"——

" No, my mother!" (anſwered he) " I am no priſo- " ner! They are our protectors, given by the moſt " generous of men, who has thus reſtored us to each " other! O! that my father were alive, to make our " happineſs compleat."

" Since Heaven has appointed otherwiſe," (ſaid *Antonio*, going up to *Alphonſo*'s mother, who was weeping with *Olivia*, on whoſe neck he had fallen) " it is our " duty to ſubmit to its pleaſure. The circumſtances " of our lives make it improper for us to think of liv- " ing a y longer here. But that ſhould not diſcourage " us. The virtuous find an home every where; We " will remove to the dominions of the *Engliſh*, where " I have lodged, in honeſt hands, fortune ſufficient to " make our retreat happy. Under the protection of " their laws, a man's mind is at liberty, and his " wealth is ſecure. Mine was my only crime here; " but I was aware of ſuch an attack, and had removed " it beyond the reach of thoſe, who impiouſly made " religion the pretext for depriving me of it. Were " my friend *Don Pedro* living, I would have removed " the objections which his high notions of honour " made to an alliance with my family, and prevailed " upon him to accompany us." * Theſe words com- forted the mother of *Alphonſo*, and made the lovers happy.

Every thing being thus ſettled, the guard was diſ- miſſed with profeſſions of the higheſt gratitude to the generous Chief, which *Antonio* and *Alphonſo* propoſed waiting on him to pay in perſon, as ſoon as he ſhould be more at leiſure; and to reward the ſoldiers for their attendance, *Alphonſo* gave them the purſe of gold, he had received from his benefactor, and *in which I was*,

* *The ſtory of* ANTONIO *followed here, but was ſo blotted and imperfect in the MS. that the Editor was obliged to omit it.*

in the diviſion of which I fell to the lot of the ſerjeant who commanded them, who, looking upon me as an earneſt of the vaſt treaſures he was to receive as his ſhare of the ſpoil, went away with an happy heart, to join his fellows, who were now in full poſſeſſion of the city.

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL makes ſome ſtriking remarks on a ſtate of abſolute liberty. Diſappointment of the hopes of the conquerors, with the natural conſequences. CHRYSAL's maſter going to take a taſte of the pleaſures of affluence, is ſlammed out of his treaſure by a ſutler, into whoſe ſervice CHRYSAL enters.

THE conduct of a man in ſuch ſcenes as this, where he thinks himſelf at liberty to follow the inſtantaneous impulſe of his own will, without apprehenſion of immediate puniſhment, ſhews the groundleſs vanity of thoſe, who boaſt ſo loudly of the excellency of his nature, and deny the neceſſity of coercive laws.

It is true, no people ever abuſed this liberty leſs than the *Engliſh*, who ſcorn to inflict upon others that oppreſſion from which their laws protect themſelves; as on the other hand, ſlaves, on a change of fortune, always prove the moſt imperious tyrants; but ſtill the circumſtances attending even the moſt moderate exertion of it are too ſhocking for diſpaſſionate deſcription, wherefore I ſhall waive the painful taſk.

As ſoon as ſome degree of order was eſtabliſhed in the city, the victorious commanders proceeded to divide the ſpoil, *a work for which they all ſhew'd their capacity in the moſt remarkable manner*, the pittance which they thought proper to appoint for the ſhare of each of the private men, who had literally borne the heat and burthen of the day, being a trifle beneath the acceptance of any but a beggar who wanted a morſel of bread, and not *the fifty thouſandth part* of what

what the chief commanders, who comparatively had lived in luxury, and iſſued their orders from places of ſafety, modeſtly owned to have reſerved for each of themſelves.

Nor was the caſe of the inferior officers, who executed thoſe orders, any better, their ſhares not being ſufficient to defray the extraordinary expences which they had been at, to provide for the enterprize, much leſs the extraordinary expence of living, where the indiſpenſible neceſſaries of life were ſubject to the moſt exorbitant impoſitions of an avaritious, and arbitrary will; ſo that all they gained by their conqueſt was to exchange the dangers of war, for the miſeries of want.

This diſappointment of the hopes which alone had ſupported their ſpirits through hardſhips almoſt beyond the power of nature to ſupport, filled up the black liſt of the calamities which attended this enterprize, aggravating by deſpair the diſeaſes to which the climate ſubjected the victors to ſuch a degree, that their loſs, after their conqueſt, exceeded many times that which they had ſuffered in the ſiege from ſo many combin'd cauſes.

To the truth of this repreſentation, which to unexperienced ſpeculation may appear too ſeverely drawn, the wretched remains of the conquering army which returned to their exhauſted country, bore a melancholy teſtimony.——But to quit theſe diſagreeable reflections!

Such a treaſure as I was (a greater much than he had ever been poſſeſſed of before!) raiſed the ſpirits of my maſter, the ſerjeant, ſo high, that he went directly to a ſutler's tent to take a taſte of the good living, which he thought himſelf ſecure of, for the remainder of his days.

On his entering the tent, and aſking what entertainment he could have, the ſutler, ignorant of his wealth, anſwered with a curſe, that he had none for ſuch ſhabby fellows as he, and took him by the ſhoulder to thruſt him out. Provoked at ſuch an indignity to a perſon of his preſent conſequence, my maſter turned upon him, and pulling *me* out of his

pocket, demanded haughtily, why he might not have what he would pay for, as well as another?

The ſight of the gold inſtantly changed the ſutler's whole behaviour. "My worthy friend!" (ſaid he, ſhaking the ſerjeant by the hand) "I beg your par-"don. I actually did not perceive whom I ſpoke to, "I am ſo hurried about. But come along with me, "and I'll make you amends. I have a nice leg of a "fowl which was beſpoke for your colonel; but *firſt* "*come firſt ſerved*, as the ſaying is, ſo here it is for "you; and here is a bottle of wine as cool as if it came "but this minute from *Ireland*."

My maſter was not proof againſt ſuch an invitation. He *fell to*, without more ceremony, and when he had finiſhed his feaſt, calling to know what he had to pay, the ſutler anſwered, Two doubloons.

"Two doubloons? Two devils!" (ſaid the ſerjeant, ſtarting at ſuch a demand) "For a leg of an old hen, as "black as Hell, and lean as *Beelzebub*; and a bottle of "rot-gut, ſour cyder? No! no! friend! no ſuch tricks "for me. I am not to be *flammed* ſo neither."

"Why there it is now!" (anſwered the ſutler, not much pleaſed with my maſter's looks) "The moment a man "grows rich, he grows covetous. I received the ſame "for the other leg of that very fowl this moment from "an enſign, who by the ſame token left his laced waiſt-"coat in pawn for half the money. But I will not fall "out with you for ſuch a trifle, as I expect more of your "cuſtom; ſo e'en give what you pleaſe. You can't "think one doubloon too much I am ſure! But you "ſhall make it up another time."

Such an argument could not be reſiſted. The ſerjeant threw me down upon the table with an air of grandeur, and went to conſider how he ſhould lay out to the beſt advantage, the treaſures which he expected immediately to receive.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

Character of CHRYSAL's *new maſter. The right way not to ſuffer by making miſtakes. A curious converſation between* CHRYSAL's *maſter and two perſons of conſequence lays open the ſecrets of ſome intereſting affairs. He makes up a fooliſh diſpute by a ſenſible toaſt.*

I WAS now entered into a ſervice, which opened to me ſo many various views of human folly, vice and wretchedneſs, as made the proſpect painful.

The manner in which my new maſter got me into his poſſeſſion, ſhewed his character in a light ſufficiently ſtrong. But I ſoon had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing that with all his addreſs at impoſition, he was himſelf no more than the tool of the impoſitions of his ſuperiors, who ſcarce left him the pooreſt gleanings to pick up, after all their plenteous harveſt: The juſt and conſtant fate of all ſuch wretches.

The continual hurry in which he was engaged, though he had falſely alledged it as an excuſe for his treatment of my late maſter, the ſerjeant, was really ſufficient to excuſe any inadvertency, or blunder, and muſt have cauſed many in any one, whoſe ideas were not ſettled in one certain courſe, out of which it was impoſſible to divert them, of which his cuſtomers, whoſe attentions were not ſo diſtracted, might be apt to take advantage. But I ſoon found, that he was in no danger of that kind, all his thoughts having ſuch an invariable bias to his own intereſt, that every miſtake naturally fell on that ſide, for which upon detection his hurry was a ready and probable excuſe.

The ſerjeant had ſcarce left him, when two perſons entered, one of whom I directly knew to be my old maſter, the Admiral's agent for *ſecret ſervices*, as I ſoon found the other to be in the ſame important ſtation with the General.

My

My maſter, who was not at a loſs for the occaſion of their viſit, led them into the moſt private place in the tent, and ſetting before them a bottle of *his beſt*, proceeded to buſineſs. "Mr. Admiral, to your good "health! Mr. General, my very hearty ſervice to "you!" (ſaid he, filling a brimmer, and addreſſing each, by the title of his maſter, as he ſhook them by the hand) "Here is a good concluſion of the cam- "paign to us. I was impatient for your coming to "know how I ſhould go on. Here have been ſeve- "ral officers with me already, for credit on the ſcore "of their prize-money; for the length of the ſiege, "and the dearneſs of every thing has not left them a "penny, nor any thing to pawn for one. I have got "as many cloaths, and things of all kinds, as would "ſerve to ſet up a *Monmouth-ſtreet* merchant. If the "place had held but but a few days longer, the poor "devils muſt have done duty in *Buff*. Hah! "hah! hah!"

"And the propereſt dreſs for them:" (returned *the Admiral)* "Who wants any cloaths in ſuch a "climate as this? I am ſure I go naked half my "time, though I keep under cover, and have nothing "to do to heat me."

"Very true!" (anſwered my maſter) "But naked "and hungry both are not quite ſo well; and when "their moveables were all gone after their money, I "don't know who would have ſupplied them!"

"Then let them live on their allowance!" (ſaid the General) "They who can't afford to pay for better, "ſhould be content with that."——

"To die upon it, you ſhould ſay;" (interrupted my maſter) "I am ſure the ſtores laid in are ſuch as "no one can live upon, that has ever known what "living was. For my part, I wonder the contractors "were not aſhamed to ſupply ſuch wretched ſtuff of all "kinds. They muſt have no conſcience at all, who "can do ſuch things"——

"Conſcience! hah! hah! hah! who ever heard a "ſutler ſpeak of conſcience before;" (ſaid the Admi- ral) "And pray, my conſcientious friend, what do

"you

" you charge a bottle for this moſt excellent wine of " yours?"——

" For this wine?" (anſwered my maſter, palating it two or three times) " I charge for this wine only a " *piſtole*; and let me tell you that is not ſo much, " conſidering every thing. This Burgundy coſt me " five ſhillings a bottle, prime coſt; and when you " compute every expence, you'll find that my profit is " nothing extraordinary; nothing at all in compariſon " of what others get."

" No! to be ſure, replied the General, your conſci- " ence won't ſuffer you to do as they do! you are too " good a man."——

" Too good a *Chriſtian* you ſhould ſay;" (interrupted the Admiral) " as appears by your *baptizing* your wine " ſo piouſly! hah! hah! hah! Pray what did the wa- " ter coſt, that is mixed with this ſame Burgundy? I " hope that did not ſtand you in five ſhillings a bottle " too? hah! hah! hah!"——

" It is very well, gentlemen!" (returned my maſter with a ſneer) " You are pleaſed to be merry. But if " I had not ſome way to make out matters, I could " never pay the exorbitant taxes, which are ſqueezed " from me, by ſome people whom I ſhan't name. " And ſo here's my ſervice to you both once more! " When you lower *your compoſition*, I'll leſſen the " quantity of water, and mend mine. Hah! hah! " hah!"——

" And ſo you had need," (ſaid the General) " to " make it drinkable: As it is, I wonder it does not " poiſon every one that taſtes it. When I lived at " the *Shakeſpear*, we did not give worſe than this to " our company after they were dead drunk!"

" Worſe than this!" (added the Admiral) " If you " had given me half ſo bad, I ſhould have broken your " head with the bottle."

" Broken my head! (returned the General) " fine " words truly! When you were a blue-noſed jour- " ney-man Barber, and uſed to come to me to beg bro- " ken victuals, and bottoms of bottles, you ſpoke in " another tone."——

" And

"And when I was, Sir," (replied the Admiral) "I "had a good trade, and never looked upon myſelf as "upon a level with the Pimp of a tavern."——

"And yet that Pimping made you what you are "now!" (retorted the General riſing up in a paſſion) "You forget perhaps how you begged of me to in-"troduce your ſiſter to the Admiral, by which means "you got into his ſervice! This is a fine return in-"deed."——

"And you forget too," (ſaid the Admiral ſtarting from his ſeat, and catching at the bottle) "That it was "that ſame ſiſter of mine, who got you into the Gene-"ral's ſervice, if you go to that, ſo that I think the "obligation is equal."——

"Gentlemen! dear gentlemen!" (interrupted my maſter, clapping an hand on each of their collars) "Conſider what you are doing! What will the world "ſay of ſuch a quarrel between gentlemen, who ought "to agree like brothers. For ſhame! every body will "laugh at you! come! ſit down, and be good friends, "and I'll try if I have not one bottle of better wine, "over which we'll make up all matters."——Then bringing it, and filling his glaſs, "Come, gentlemen," (continued he, ſhaking each of them by the hand) "I'll give you a toaſt that ſhall drown all animoſity: "Here is proſperity to pimping! it is the beſt trade "going, and has made us all! Aye, and is practiſed "too by people in every ſtation, however they may af-"fect to turn up their noſes at it. So let us attend our "buſineſs, and not fall together by the ears for nothing, "like a parcel of dogs about a bare bone. It ſignifies "nothing what we have been; if we mind our *bits* "now, we ſhall be gentlemen as good as the beſt of "them; and as well reſpected too."

The Admiral and General ſaw the force of what he ſaid, and pledging his toaſt, ſhook hands and were as good friends as ever.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

Continued. The myſteries of agency; and convenience of a military government, with ſome curious notions of the genteeleſt ways of riſing in life.

"WELL, gentlemen," (ſaid my maſter, who was not pleaſed at their jeſts upon his liquor, becauſe he could not deny the truth of them) "I hope "that wine pleaſes you!"

"Aye!" (anſwered the Admiral) "this is *the* "*right ſort!* this is the *thing*. Give us this; and "keep the other for officers, and ſuch as are not uſed to "better."———

"And if it poiſons them" (added the Admiral) "the "public will have the fewer to pay. Now they have "done the buſineſs let them live or die as they can, we "care not. That's nothing to us."

"Very true!" (ſaid my maſter) "All we have to "do is to make the moſt of them, while they do "live; and therefore I ſhould be glad to know, as I "ſaid before, how far I may venture to go with "them, on the credit of their prize-money; for as "the place was ſaved from being plundered by the "articles of capitulation, they muſt all get money on "their ſhares, whether they will or not; their neceſſi-"ties are ſuch."

"So much the better for us, who can buy their "ſhares:" (anſwered the Admiral) "They'll give the "better bargains. Their neceſſity is our gain."—

"Aye!" (replied my maſter) "But I don't find "they intend ſelling. All they propoſe is to mort-"gage."—

"Then let them ſee who'll give them money:" (ſaid the General) "No! no! no mortgage for us. An "abſolute ſale, or nothing. We'll have no after "reckonings; no *ever haling* accounts. As to their "being unwilling to ſell, we'll manage that matter

"with

" with them. When you have got them ſufficiently " in your books, call for your money, and as it will " be impoſſible for them to pay, apply to the com- " mander in chief, who will oblige them to do you " juſtice."

" Why! to be ſure, that muſt do!" (anſwered my " maſter) " But how far am I to truſt then?"——

" This will ſhew you!" (replied the General) " Here is the rate of all their ſhares. Look at the ſum " total. What noble fortunes that would have made for " half a dozen reaſonable men. It went to my heart to " *fritter* it away among ſo many."—

" This! this the rate of their ſhares!" (ſaid my maſ ter, not able to conceal his aſtoniſhment, when he looked at the paper which the other gave him) " Is it poſſible " that this ſhould be all?"——

" Yes! (returned the Admiral) and too much for " them too. More than moſt of them ever had before, " or will make a good uſe of now."——

" Why, they'll mutiny, and cut all our throats!" (returned my maſter) " There are ſeveral of them who " owe me almoſt as much as this already. I thought " they would have had ten times this ſum at " leaſt. They'll certainly mutiny and cut all our " throats."

" Don't give yourſelf any trouble about their " mutinying!" (ſaid the General) " Do you mind your " buſineſs and leave us to take care of that. Their " ſpirits will hardly be ſo high! if you have gone hand " over head and truſted them ſo far, you muſt abide by " the loſs. I thought I gave you friendly caution about " that before."

" And ſo," (returned my maſter) " I am not to go " beyond this rate, you ſay?"——

" Not a penny!" (anſwered the Admiral) " That is " your rule. Whatever you can beat them down of " that ſhall be your own."

" That is deducting five *per cent.* Agency!" (interpoſed the General) " and five or ten *per cent.* as " you can make your bargain, for prompt payment, " for we will not appear to have any hand in the af-

" fair,

" fair, farther than paying you the money. It muſt not " be known that we are concerned in the leaſt."——

" You concerned!" (returned my maſter) I don't un- " derſtand you. Are you to be concerned with me, in " what I buy?"

" Not in the leaſt" (returned the Admiral) " any " farther than by employing you to act for us. You " ſeem to miſtake the matter entirely. You are to " buy the ſhares for us according to this rate, for " which we will allow you a proper agency: And " that is all the concern you are to have in the af- " fair,"——

" But I ſuppoſe" (ſaid my maſter) " I may buy on " my own account if I pleaſe!"——

" Buy on your own account!" (interrupted the Ge- nural) " Such another word, and you ſhall neither ſell " nor buy any thing here. Are not we the commanders " agents: And do you think they will ſuffer us to be in- " terloped upon! You may be very well content with " the profits of your own buſineſs, without thinking to " interfere in our's."

" I aſk your pardon, gentlemen!" (ſaid my maſter, who knew their power too well to diſpute with them) " It was only a miſtake. I by no means pre- " ſume to interfere with you; and ſhall be proud to " execute your orders on whatever terms you think " proper. I ſuppoſe though our former *compoſition* is " to end. Proviſions will now come in from every part, " ſo that we can never think of keeping them up at the " former prices."

" Can't you ſo?" (anſwered the General) " That " ſhall be your own fault then; and your own loſs too, " I can tell you. Let proviſions come in as they will, " no one ſhall ſell an ounce here without our permiſſion, " and that ſhall be on our own terms, you may be aſ- " ſured. Our hands are not tied up by laws. Ours is " *a military government*, in which we can do what we " pleaſe without being accountable to any one So you " may go on as before."

" But, gentlemen," (replied my maſter) you ſhould " conſider that the whole odium of this will fall upon " me,

" me, as you do not appear in it, ſo that I ſhall loſe my " character for ever."

" Your character! Hah! hah! hah!" (interrupted the General) " A ſutler's character! I ſhall never be " able to bear the word again! Pray, my good friend, " what character had a ſutler ever to loſe, that would " not be a greater loſs to the finder? Come! here's " my ſervice to you. Go on with your buſineſs, and " make money, and never fear ſuffering by the loſs " of your character. It is time for us to go and ſet- " tle what taxes we ſhall lay upon the different kinds " of merchandize, that ſhall be brought here. *Our* " *duties* ſhall be paid as well as thoſe of any king " of them all. This is our reign; and if we do not " make the moſt of it, we have no one to blame, but " ourſelves."

" And as rich as ſo many kings you will be;" (ſaid my maſter) " if you can carry off things in the manner " you ſay."——

" As to our being rich!" (returned the Admiral) " that depends entirely upon our own management. " Our principals indeed will be rich enough, which is " all they care for; not what becomes of us, whom " they would have to their buſineſs for nothing, or next " to it. But they ſhall find themſelves miſtaken. Every " thing muſt go through our hands; and *gold in* " *handling will ſtick to the fingers*, as the ſong ſays. " We ſhall feather our neſts in ſpite of them. They " cannot do without us; and will hardly be fond of " calling us to too ſtrict an account, for fear of our tel- " ling tales. To be ſure the great harveſt will be " their's; but we will take toll."

" I don't doubt but you will," (ſaid my maſter) " twice over for fear of miſtake, as the miller does. " Why you'll make ſuch fortunes that you won't know " what to do with yourſelves."

" Never fear that!" (anſwered the General) " we " ſhall not be at a loſs. For my part I deſign to buy a " borough, and puſh my fortune in parliament. That's " the genteeleſt buſineſs a gentleman can follow now, " and the readieſt way of advancing in life, and making " a family."——

" Now

" Now I think otherwiſe;" (ſaid the Admiral) " and " that it is the moſt ungenteel way; ſuch dirty jobs " are required for every thing a man gets, that it is " beneath a gentleman to do them. My ſcheme is to " buy an *Iriſh Peerage* at once, and then live ſplendid- " ly, without troubling myſelf about any thing. Or if " I ſhould grow tired of idleneſs, go into Parliament " there, and turn *Patriot*, and make ſpeeches for the " good of my country."

" Both your ſchemes may be very good!" (ſaid my maſter) " but my ambition is not ſo high as either, " at leaſt as yet. I will try to get a *Contract*; and " then I ſhall not fear making a fortune ſufficient to " do what you propoſe, or more if I chuſe it; with- " out being ſneered at, for my folly. You may ſay " what you will, but there is more to be got by a " *contract* than by every other way; and therefore " it is the genteeleſt in my opinion. How many *con-* " *tractors* have I ſeen buy noblemen's fine houſes, and " members of parliament's eſtates, with the profits " of a ſingle campaign? And ſo, *My lord*, and you, " moſt honourable *Mr. Member*, I am your humble " ſervant."

" Honeſt *Mr. Contractor*" (replied both at ſame time) " Yours."

CHAP. XV.

Affecting conſequences of carrying the foregoing ſchemes into execution; with the concluſion of the character and hiſtory of CHRYSAL's *maſter.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

AS ſoon as this worthy pair had left my maſter, he ſet about his buſineſs of preying upon the neceſſities of every one, who came near him, with as much keenneſs as a vulture tears a carrion, and with as little feeling, or he could never have gone through with it.

The

purchaſed at the higheſt prices in order to ſend a ſpeedy and effectual ſupply to the troops, who were known to want them, ſo that there could be no advance made upon them, which could defray ſuch additional duties; that his owners, not in the leaſt ſuſpecting any ſuch, had given him no power to pay them; and that many of the commodities, being of a periſhing nature, muſt be damaged if not permitted to be landed directly, by which means not only the merchants would be great loſers, but alſo the troops ſuffer ſeverely for the want of common neceſſaries, which they could not otherwiſe be ſupplied with.

But all he could ſay had no effect. They did not even deign to make him an anſwer, farther than that they had authority for what they did, and expected obedience, not arguments, which they had not leiſure to liſten to.

Such a repulſe, however unjuſt in itſelf, and perſonally offenſive in the manner of it, was far from giving my maſter any concern. On the contrary, the difficulties which it threw upon the buſineſs of his owners, afforded him an opportunity of carrying on *his own private trade*, to better advantage, which no oaths they could adviſe were able to put a ſtop to, as an inſtance or two of his conduct will ſhew.

Some ſuſpicion having ariſen of his commerce with the ſutler, of which no direct proof could be obtained, he was ſummoned to appear before the tax gatherers *to acquit himſelf by his oath*, of ſo heinous an offence.

The ſutler, who knew the conſequence of being convicted, and with all his knowledge of the world ſaw no poſſibility of avoiding it, gave himſelf up as ruined: But my maſter ſoon ſhewed him the convenience of conſcience trained to ſwearing, for calling upon him the morning they were to appear at the dread tribunal, and ſeeing him ſo caſt down, "Chear up, brother," (ſaid he) "I'll bring you "ſafe through this ſtreight! By the virtue and "contents of this book," (pulling one out of his pocket, and kiſſing it in form) "I will never ſwear

"that

" that you have bought any thing from me; ſo throw " off that ſneaking, *Tyburn* look, and come along."

Such an aſſurance naturally gave the ſutler ſome ſpirits; though he could not conceive how he meant to make it good; but a little time cleared up the myſtery, and ſhewed him the force of a Cuſtom-houſe oath.

As ſoon as the two culprits appeared before their judges, the latter aſſuming all the dignity of their office, exaggerated the cauſe in the ſtrongeſt colours, and adminiſtering the oath to my maſter, demanded in an authoritative tone, whether he had not ſold *uncuſtomed* goods to the ſutler, and to what amount; who not in the leaſt diſconcerted either by the queſtion, or the manner in which it was put, " Why look ye, " gentlemen," (anſwered he turning the *quid* in his cheek, and pulling up his breeches at the hips, with " both his hands) " as to that affair, by the virtue of " my oath, *if I ſhould ſwear that I ſold him any, I* " *ſhould be forſworn*, and I'll always try to weather " that point, if I can."——

As there was no more than a general ſuſpicion againſt the criminals, this anſwer ſatisfied the ſagacity of their judges, and they were diſmiſſed with flying colours.

When they were alone, " Well!" (ſaid my maſter ſhaking his friend by the hand) " I told you I'd bring " you off. Let that be an example to you for the " future. *None but fools convict themſelves*; and *none* " *but greater fools expect it.* I ſhould have little bu- " ſineſs in the merchant's ſervice, if I ſcrupled ſwal- " lowing ſuch a pill as that every day of my life! No! " no! they muſt be cunning if they can make an " oath, that will ſtick in the throat of the captain of " a merchant-man, even if he can't find an opening to " ſteer through, as was the caſe here. We have a " *ſalvo* for ſuch things. *The firſt oath we take as ſoon* " *as we get into the employment, is never to ſwear the* " *truth to a Cuſtom-houſe-officer, while we live*; *ſo that* " *all the oaths they give us go for nothing.*"

But with all his cleverneſs, he ſometimes failed of ſucceſs. A lieutenant of a man of war happening as

he was *rowing guard* one night to ſee a boat put off from our ſhip, purſued it in hopes of making ſome repriſals for all the extortions he and his brethren daily ſuffered from every one concerned in trade, as he knew it muſt be a *ſmuggler*.

The hope of prize made the crew of the lieutenant's boat pull up with ſuch a ſpirit, that they gained faſt upon the *chace*, which the others ſeeing, and that it was impoſſible for them to get clear off, they threw their cargo over-board to diſappoint their purſuers of their expected booty, and then ran the boat a-ſhore to ſave themſelves from being taken, leaving her of courſe to the captors for their trouble, who rowed her away in triumph.

The chief of the ſmugglers was my maſter's ſon, who in the account he gave him of the affair on his return was proceeding to tell him the names of thoſe who had been with him; when the father ſtopping him ſhort, 'Avaſt!' (ſaid he) 'Coil up your tongue. 'I deſire to hear no more of them. Have you a mind 'to make me forſwear myſelf when I go to recover 'my boat? For have her again you know I muſt, as 'I can't get another here, nor carry on any buſineſs 'without one.'——

Accordingly next morning he made a publick enquiry after his boat, which he pretended had been ſtolen from his ſhip's ſide, and finding her in the poſſeſſion of the lieutenant, demanded to have her reſtored directly, and on his refuſal had him ſummoned before the officers of the cuſtoms, who were judges in ſuch affairs.

As he grounded his claim on her having been taken without his privity, and by perſons unknown to him, he was put to the common teſt of an oath, Whether he knew who had been in her, when ſhe was purſued by the captors. 'By the virtue of *my oath*, Gentle-'men' (anſwered he without the leaſt heſitation) '*I do not know one of them.*'

So *direct* an anſwer ſatisfied the judges who were no ways concerned in the affair; but that was not the caſe with the lieutenant: "Hold, Sir!" (ſaid he to

my

my maſter, who was ſheering off, laughing in his ſleeve) " What is that you ſay ?"——

" I ſay," (anſwered my maſter, nothing diſconcerted) " That I don't know *one* of them."——

" *One of them!*" (returned the lieutenant, who inſtantly ſaw through his evaſion) " But don't you " know *any* of them though ? Take care what you " ſay ! Perhaps I know more than you think I do !"—

" Why as to that" (replied my maſter laughing) " I cannot ſay ſo much. Perhaps I may know ſome of " them."——

" How !" (interpoſed the judge, offended at an anſwer, which he thought ſhewed a ſlight to his authority) " Did you not ſwear this moment, that you did " not know one of them ?"——

" No more do I !" (anſwered my maſter) " There " were twelve in the boat, of whom I know only " eleven ; and ſure in that caſe, I can ſafely ſwear I " do not know *one*, that is *the twelfth* of them. Hah! " hah ! hah !"

" Take care, Sir, (replied the judge) how you at- " tempt to trifle in this manner before us again. You " know the puniſhment of perjury, if you ſhould be " caught tripping."——

" Never fear !" (ſaid my maſter) " I know the *compaſs* " of my conſcience too well for that. I can ſteer as " near that wind as another. *Thus ! Thus ! and no* " *nearer*, is my trim. I'll never break an oath ; but if " I can give it the *go by*, at the *lee-ſide* thus, by a dou- " ble meaning, I hope that's no offence."—

Then turning to the lieutenant, " Well, Sir !" (continued he) " it ſeems *you have carried too much* " *ſail for me this trip ! But if I meet you upon a wind* " *again, mind your helm, or I may chance to fall* " *aboard you.* However, ſince I can't have my boat " cheaper, I muſt e'en come to your terms, ſo what do " you aſk for her ?"——

To this propoſal the lieutenant made no objection : Setting therefore his price, " Zouns !" (ſaid my maſter) " I believe you have no conſcience at all, to aſk a " man ſo much, and for his own boat !"—

At his mentioning *conſcience*, all preſent ſet up a loud laugh, and repeated the word.

Nothing abaſh'd at which, "You may laugh as "much as you pleaſe" (continued he) "but my notion "of conſcience is not to aſk out of reaſon, for any "thing one has to diſpoſe of; and ſo, Sir, if you "have a mind to part with the boat, I'll give you half "what you aſk; and I ſhould think even that too much, "but that I want her, and do not know where to get "another."

"And as I want to ſell her, and do not know where "to get another purchaſer?" (anſwered the lieutenant) "you ſhall have her. Not that I think ſhe comes very "cheap to you upon the whole neither! You have "ſworn well for her at leaſt."

"As to that matter," (replied my maſter) "that "is my buſineſs, and not yours. Here is your money; "and that is all you need care for."——Saying this, he paid him for the boat, and then walked off, without concern or ſhame — I here quitted his ſervice, of which I was heartily tired, and entered into that of the lieutenant.

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome reflections on the policy of impoſing oaths of exculpation. The proper method of preſerving the validity of oaths, with the conſequence of their being adminiſtered indiſcriminately to all perſons, and on all occaſions. An uncommon lecture from a captain of a man of war to his officers, repreſents ſome polite amuſements in an odd light.*

I SEE you are ſhocked at ſuch flagrant inſtances of profligacy, of bare-faced contempt of every thing moſt ſacred, and important. They certainly are a reproach of human nature; but that reproach muſt not be confined to thoſe alone, who obviouſly incur it. They who from falſe principles of policy give

give the occaſion, againſt the conviction of reaſon and experience, are at leaſt equally guilty.

The impotency of man to reſiſt temptation is ſuch that he is taught to pray againſt it! Why then ſhould thoſe, who are entruſted with the care of directing his actions in the common intercourſe of life, lay ſnares to lead him into it, which there is no probability of his avoiding?

Appealing to the atteſtation of the Deity, is moſt certainly the higheſt aſſurance poſſibly to be given by any being, who has a ſenſe of his dependance on that Deity; nor ſhould ever be given but on the moſt important occaſions, and in the moſt ſolemn manner; nor accepted but from ſuch as may be preſumed to underſtand the nature of it.

In ſuch circumſtances it would never be violated. Man is not ſo deſperately abandoned as to run with his eyes open into inexplicable perdition. But when that atteſtation is given lightly, for every trifle, when it is placed in oppoſition to intereſt, and demanded from ſuch as cannot be ſuppoſed to know its conſequence, the reverence which ſhould be its guard is taken off, the violation becomes familiar, and of courſe, the end, for which it is thus impiouſly, and injudiciouſly proſtituted, diſappointed; and by that means the moſt ſacred aſſurance of life rendered void, the bond of ſocial confidence and ſafety broken.

The effects of this abſurd policy of making the obligations of religion the common teſt of truth on trivial occaſions, and where intereſt is concerned, are more extenſive than is generally imagined. The immediate wants of nature engroſs the attention of the greater part of mankind too much to let them ſee the congruity of moral virtue, however evident to exerted reaſon; wherefore the threats and promiſes of Religion were found neceſſary to enforce the practice of it: But as the accompliſhment of thoſe is placed at a diſtance, when they interfere with preſent enjoyments, their force wears off, the threats loſe their terrors, and the promiſes are ſlighted by thoſe, who look no farther than the inſtant moment; and this is the great ſource of that immorality and irreligion ſo prevalent in life,

and which will never be corrected, *till legiſlators make oaths leſs common, prevent their interfering with the ſwearer's own intereſt*, (as in the inſtances which gave occaſion to theſe reflections) *explain their nature before they are adminiſtered, and inflict inſtant puniſhment on their violation.*

My new maſter had juſt returned on board, when the captain received orders to go, and aſſiſt the operations of the war, in another part of the world. The news raiſed every one's ſpirits. The ſight of a place in which moſt of them had been guilty of exceſſes, which threw them into diſtreſs, and where all had been ſo wretchedly diſappointed, was neceſſarily diſagreeable; and conſequently a removal to another, where a new object attracted their attention from ſuch reflections, and awoke new hopes, however likely to end in the ſame manner as the former, gave them pleaſure.

There was a decency in the behaviour of both men and officers in this ſhip, ſo very different from what I had ſeen in others, as to ſtrike me with an agreeable ſurprize. But I was not long at a loſs for the reaſon. As ſoon as the ſhip was under ſail, the captain ſummoned all his officers into the great cabbin, and after ſome general inſtructions about their duty, "Gentle-"men," (ſaid he, addreſſing himſelf to my maſter, and another, who had been but lately appointed to his ſhip) "as we have never ſailed together before, I muſt "deſire your attention to a few hints, which I always "take the liberty to give, in ſuch circumſtances.

"We are now ſhut up together in a priſon, where "the unavoidable inconveniencies of our ſituation "make all our care neceſſary to prevent its becoming "inſupportable to us. For this reaſon the firſt thing "I recommend to you is, *not to game*. Beſide the dan-"ger of diſagreement when the paſſions are agitated by "the viciſſitudes of play, our pay is ſcarce ſufficient "for our ſupport, ſo that the leaſt loſs muſt be diſtreſs-"ing, the conſequence of which muſt be general un-"happineſs, for who can ſee his companion miſerable, "without ſharing in his miſery?

"There

" There is another thing, againſt which, though " not commonly conſidered in this light, I muſt ear- " neſtly caution you, as inevitably throwing a gloom " over that chearfulneſs of mind, which is the greateſt " happineſs of life, and to us muſt ſupply the place of " every other happineſs, and this is *the vice of profane* " *curſing and ſwearing*, to the reproach of our ſervice, " too prevalent among us.

" There is no man, however hardened in this de- " teſtable habit, but knows it to be a crime, and feels " a check from within every time he is guilty of it, " the repetition of which ſelf accuſation ſours his tem- " per, and makes him diſſatisfied with himſelf, and " every perſon and thing about him. For the truth " of this I appeal to unvaried experience. Who ever " ſaw a man ſerenely chearful that was addicted to " this vice? (I might ſay indeed to any vice, but as " our ſituation precludes us from the practice of moſt " others, I mention theſe only, into which we may fall) " for occaſional mirth is a very different thing, and too " often leads into conſequences deſtructive of ſerenity " of mind, eſpecially when it is raiſed by means incon- " ſiſtent with virtue.

" I do not ſpeak of the effect, which the practice " of virtue has upon our reſolution. The courage of " a *Briton* can never be doubted; but ſtill there is as " much difference between that of a virtuous, and a " vicious man, as of the ſame perſon when ſober, or " intoxicated with liquor. The former is uniform, " ſteady, and attentive to improve every advantage, " or remedy any misfortune; the other boiſterous, " headlong, and blinded with paſſion; for paſſion only " can make a man face death, who in the cool mo- " ments of reflection is afraid to die. In a word, one " is the courage of a man, the other the raſhneſs of a " brute.

" Againſt theſe two things therefore, *gaming* and " *ſwearing*, I take the liberty to caution you, as a " friend, who is ſincerely deſirous of your welfare; " but there is another vice, in reſpect to which I do " not think myſelf obliged to obſerve the ſame deli- " cacy; and this is *drunkenneſs*, which is liable to be

" attended with ſuch dangerous conſequences in our " ſituation in particular, for I think it unneceſſary to " mention any other, that I ſhall ever exert all the " authority entruſted to me to ſuppreſs it, and there- " fore it is but juſt for me to declare, that no officer, " who is once guilty of it under my command, ſhall " ever do duty under me more.

" This, gentlemen, is what I had to ſay to you. The " obſervation of theſe few hints will make us happy " among ourſelves, and reſpected by our men, without " which it is impoſſible for us to be well obeyed by " them; for heedleſs and profligate as they may ap- " pear, they are the ſevereſt criticks on the conduct of " their officers, and not only like people in higher ſtati- " ons, revere the virtues which they have not reſoluti- " on to imitate; but alſo actually do imitate them in " a great degree."

CHAP. XVIII.

The folly of a perſon's proſtituting his character to pleaſe his company, aggravated by the dangerous miſtake of ridicule for applauſe. CHRYSAL'*s maſter changes place with the chaplain, and preaches him an intereſting ſermon, in which, among remarks more juſt than polite, he gives an uncommon reaſon for the particular deformity of vice in women.*

I HAVE already taken notice of the effect, which the advice and example of the captain had upon every one in the ſhip. The officers lived like a family of brothers, and the men did their duty with regularity and pleaſure; but though all paid due reſpect to what he ſaid, it was impoſſible to work ſuch an inſtantaneous reformation, but that ſome of them would now and then jeſt among themſelves upon his conduct, as, from compariſon with that of others of his rank, inconſiſtent with his character; and in other reſpects indulge in the levities of diſcourſe and behaviour too general among perſons

perſons not much accuſtomed to the rules of rational converſation.

But whatever allowance the circumſtances of their education might claim for ſuch follies in the officers, the perſon who tranſgreſſed moſt was certainly entitled to none. This was the chaplain, who to avoid the imputation of being hypocritically ſanctified, ran into the oppoſite extreme.

The ſelfiſh vanity of man always takes pleaſure in ſeeing any perſon debaſe himſelf, by acting beneath his character, eſpecially if that character is ſuch as appears to be placed in a more reſpectable point of view than their own. The officers, who in general look upon a chaplain as no better than lumber in a ſhip, and think he is placed as a kind of check upon them, were pleaſed with this proſtitution, which he, by a common miſtake of ridicule for applauſe, gave ſtill farther into, *imagining they laughed with him*, when in reality, *they laughed at him.*

But my maſter beheld the matter in another light; and taking an opportunity one day, when the chaplain and he were by themſelves in the ward-room, "I have "obſerved with much concern, Sir," (ſaid he) "that "you are falling into an error, which I have known "prove fatal to many gentlemen of your profeſſion. "This is departing from your character, in order to "accommodate yourſelf to what you think the hu"mour of your company. Believe me, Sir, no man "ever did ſo, who did not immediately fall into con"tempt, with the very people, whoſe approbation he "ſtrove to purchaſe at ſo dear a rate. The greateſt "libertine deſpiſes a clergyman who is a libertine; "and the reaſon is plain. *You are ſet apart from the "reſt of mankind to perform the rites of Religion, and "inculcate virtue by your precepts and example; and "for this you are paid by the publick, who expect that "you ſhould earn your wages, by doing your duty; and "look upon thoſe who do not, as no better than cheats.* "This may appear an odd way of ſpeaking, but it is "true nevertheleſs.

"On the other hand, where a clergyman fulfils "his duty, and enforces his preaching by his practice,

" though he may not abſolutely reform all thoſe with " whom he converſes, yet he will certainly work this " good effect, that he will keep them in awe, and pre- " vent their running into outrageous lengths of wick- " edneſs, at leaſt in his preſence. For whatever people " may inconſiderately imagine, *no man ever acted in " character, who was not reſpected; no man ever acted " out of character, who was not deſpiſed.*

" Do but reflect a moment, in what light you your- " ſelf would look upon a lady who ſhould ſpeak ob- " ſcenely, ſwear, drink, and talk of fighting, and it " will ſhew you the juſtice of this remark. For what " makes theſe vices ſo particularly hateful in a woman, " is not any thing in their nature particularly contra- " dictory to the ſex, more than ours, but becauſe they " are contrary to her character.

" I beg your pardon, Sir, for talking to you in this " free manner, in reſpect to your conduct, which I " am ſenſible concerns only yourſelf; but as the er- " rors you have fallen into appear to have ariſen mere- " ly from inadvertency, and miſtake, I think it my " duty to caution you againſt the danger of them, " particularly in your preſent ſituation, with which I " have had the opportunity of being much better ac- " quainted, than you poſſibly can be. I was in the " ſervice long, very long, before you were born; and " have been intimate with many chaplains, but never " knew one who proſtituted his character to humour " his company, who was not neglected by them, when " they had it in their power to have ſerved him; as " on the contrary, I have known many inſtances of " thoſe who have reaped the happy fruits of a regular, " and virtuous conduct, by which they acquired an " eſteem, that proved the foundation of their fortune; " and if all have not been equally ſucceſsful, their " diſappointment muſt be attributed to ſome other " cauſe.

" I would not by this be underſtood to adviſe you " to a moroſe diſtance, and ſtiffneſs of behaviour, or " aſperity of reproof upon every occaſion. They ſel- " dom, if ever, do good, in any ſituation; in yours

" they

" they will certainly do hurt, by piquing falſe pride to " act in oppoſition to them, without regard to the con- " ſequences. An obliging temper and uniformly de- " cent conduct lead inſenſibly to imitation, where " contradiction or direct admonition would be held " impertinent. Theſe hints are ſo obvious, that they " may ſeem unneceſſary; but it is want of attention " to them which has made ſo many chaplains miſcarry " in life, and indeed has brought the very character " into diſrepute.

The chaplain, who wanted neither natural good ſenſe, nor virtuous inclinations, was ſtruck with the juſtice and force of his rebuke. He thanked my maſter in the moſt ingenuous manner, and promiſed to regulate his future conduct by his advice. Such a change at firſt naturally expoſed him to the merriment of his companions; but as my maſter took his part, and ſhewed them the injuſtice of ſuch behaviour, it ſoon wore off, and he had the heart-felt ſatisfaction to find himſelf treated with friendly reſpect and confidence by thoſe, whoſe groſs familiarity had before often given him pain, as it evidently implied contempt.

CHAP. XIX.

CHRYSAL *deſcribes true compaſſion, and ſhews the general conſequence of a man's acknowledging diſtreſs, with the reaſons of it.* CHRYSAL'S *maſter is prevailed upon by the captain to tell him the cauſe of his melancholy, which is removed by an act of uncommon generoſity.* CHRYSAL *enters into a new ſervice.*

AS the captain maintained the moſt friendly intercourſe with his officers, he ſoon obſerved that my maſter laboured under ſome heavy diſtreſs of mind. This naturally raiſed his compaſſion, and *as real compaſſion never ſees diſtreſs, which it is not deſirous of*

of alleviating, he frequently took occaſion, when they were by themſelves, to turn his diſcourſe upon ſuch ſubjects as he thought might lead him to open himſelf; but finding that modeſty, or a reſerve contracted from long acquaintance with misfortune, and obſervation that *the knowledge of a man's being in diſtreſs always ſinks him in the eſteem of his companions, by cutting off their hopes of ſervice from him, and alarming their apprehenſions of his expecting aſſiſtance from them*, prevented his taking the hint, he reſolved to break through forms, and aſk him directly.

Seeing him therefore one day walking the quarter deck, in a mood of deep melancholy, he called him into the great-cabbin, and deſired him to ſit down, after a little general chat, "I fear, Sir," (ſaid he) "that "ſomething hangs upon your ſpirits. If it is proper "to be communicated, let me know what it is, "and depend upon every aſſiſtance in my power to "make you eaſy. I aſk not from idle, or impertinent "curioſity."

"Sir," (anſwered my maſter, ſtruck with the manner in which he ſpoke) "I believe you above the in"fluence of ſuch motives, and ſhall therefore obey "your kind commands without ſcruple. It is too "true, that I am unhappy; and I fear my unhappi"neſs is too common. I have devoted my life to a "profeſſion in which I have ſerved my country above "forty years with fidelity; and I will take the liberty "to ſay with ſome ſucceſs: And now when my con"ſtitution is broken with wounds, fatigue, and "change of climates, when nature calls for reſt, and "refreſhment, the only reward I have to expect is "poverty, and its inſeparable attendant, contempt. "This, Sir, is the cauſe of my unhappineſs; and ſuch "a cauſe, as I believe you will think to be a juſt "one."

"Very true, Sir," (replied the captain) it is a juſt "one; and what muſt affect every man of ſpirit, and "a generous way of thinking. But you ſhould not "yield to it too far! You are ſtill in the vigour of life; "and while the war continues ſhould look forward

'with hope. Though you have been unſucceſsful hi-
'therto, fortune may prove more kind.'

'Alas, Sir,' (returned my maſter) 'I have been
'ſo long cheated by hope, that I now deteſt it.
'When I came out upon this laſt expedition, our
'force made me ſo confident of ſucceſs, and I was ſo
'well acquainted with the wealth in the place, that
'I unhappily gave way to hope, and ran into expen-
'ces, which though far from being unneceſſary, were
'imprudent, and threaten now to involve me in ruin,
'on my return home, as it has been thought proper
'by our ſuperiors to rate our ſervice in the conqueſt,
'at ſo low a price.'

'If that is the caſe then!' (ſaid the captain) 'do
'not return til matters mend. Whenever I am order-
'ed home, I'll take care to get you removed into ano-
'ther ſhip. Your ſtaying on board on ſuch an account
'is not inconſiſtent with the ſtricteſt honour, as you do
'it with an intention truly honeſt.'

'Dear Sir,' (anſwered my maſter) 'that is very
'true; but I am precluded even from the wretched
'relief of a voluntary exile. I have a wife, and
'children at home, the apprehenſion of whoſe diſ-
'treſſes drives me to deſpair. It was to cloath and
'ſettle them in a little habitation, where they might
'enjoy the indiſpenſible neceſſaries of life with ſome
'degree of comfort, that I anticipated my ſucceſs,
'in the manner I mentioned; and now as that ſucceſs
'has fallen ſo far ſhort of what I thought juſt expec-
'tation, all the former ſavings of my life (ſavings from
'the very neceſſities of nature) will be torn away,
'by the rapacious hands of mercileſs creditors, to
'make up the deficiency in the articles bought of
'themſelves to diſcharge their demands, and my
'wretched family thrown upon the unfriendly world,
'without its being in my power to aſſiſt them. I
'muſt therefore return, and go into a jail to prevent
'their ſtarving in the ſtreets. What affected myſelf
'only, honeſt indignation enabled me to ſupport. I
'have ſeen boys, whoſe ignorance I deſpiſed, and
'men, whoſe principles I deteſted, preferred to com-
'mand, while my ſervices were overlooked; but as

'I had

'I had not the intereſt of the former, nor the *modiſh* 'merit of the latter, I bore my fate with patience. But 'to have thoſe dearer to me than life expoſed to miſery 'is more than I can bear.'——

'Nor ſhall you bear it!' (replied the captain, who had feigned to cough to hide the ſympathetic tear, that gliſtened in his eyes) 'Nor ſhall you bear it. How 'much is the debt, that alarms you? I will advance it 'for you directly; and not that only, I will take upon 'me to make your merit (to which I am no ſtranger) 'known to your ſuperiors, in ſuch a light as ſhall not 'fail of juſt reward.'

'O Sir!' (returned my maſter, as ſoon as the fulneſs of his heart gave him utterance) 'How can I 'ſubmit to obligations to which it is impoſſible I ſhould 'ever make any return?'

'All the return I deſire' (anſwered the captain) 'is 'your friendſhip. Speak! how much do you want? 'The packet is yet in ſight. I will order a ſignal to be 'made for her, and give you a draft upon my a-'gent.'——

'Good Heaven!' (exclaimed my maſter) 'Can 'there be ſuch virtue in man?'——

'Come! what is the ſum?' (interrupted the captain, who wanted to ſhorten a converſation, that began to be too affecting to him) 'I ſhall think you 'doubt my ſincerity if you heſitate to accept of my 'friendſhip.'——

'Such a doubt,' (returned my maſter, whoſe heart a guſh of tears had lightened) 'would be a blacker 'crime, than ever ſtained my ſoul! No! I receive your 'beneficence with humble gratitude, as from the hand 'of Heaven, nor will mention any other return, but 'what muſt be made to that, till it ſhall be pleaſed to 'bleſs me with better ability.

Then pulling out his pocket-book, 'Here is the 'account of what I owe,' (continued he, giving him ſome papers, and a purſe containing little more than his ſhare of the price of the ſmuggler's boat:) 'And 'here is all my worldly wealth, which is no more than 'an aſſignment of my miſerable prize-money, and theſe 'few pieces of gold, thrown by fortune in my way,

'moſtly

" moſtly ſince our hands were tied upon the capitulation. " For the balance I muſt be your debtor."

" For the balance!" (anſwered the captain, returning the purſe, and the aſſignment) " No! you ſhall be " my debtor (if you will call it ſo) for the whole. It " would be ſtrange friendſhip to ſtrip you of every " thing. You may want yourſelf."—

" Excuſe me, Sir," (interrupted my maſter, unable to ſupport the delicacy, the dignity of honour) " I " am not ſo low a wretch, as to accept of more than I " indiſpenſibly want, and that from perſons dearer to me " than myſelf. If you will not permit me to make the " debt as light as I can, it is impoſſible for me to receive " your friendſhip, however eſſential to the happineſs of " my heart. I am ſorry you ſhould have entertained ſo " mean an opinion of me."—

" I have the higheſt opinion of you!" (replied the captain, who ſaw what pain he had given him) " and " ſpoke with the warmth of my regard, without the moſt " diſtant deſign of giving you offence. But you ſhall " make your own terms, on this condition though, that " if you have any occaſion for money, you will apply " to me with the freedom of a friend."

To ſuch a propoſal, it was impoſſible to refuſe aſſenting. My maſter complied, and the captain taking the money, *&c.* from him, deſired that he would order a ſignal to be made for the Packet, and write his letters, while he himſelf would draw a bill upon his agent. ———The ſentiments expreſſed by the captain made it a pleaſure to me to paſs into his ſervice on this occaſion.

As ſoon as the lieutenant went out, my new maſter walked a turn or two about his cabbin, in the exalted happineſs of conſcious virtue; and then drawing a bill, for conſiderably more than the lieutenant was to pay, he deſired that he ſhould be called, and when he entered, " I beg pardon (ſaid he) for interrupting you, " but it is to deſire that you will preſent my compliments " to your wife, and tell her I beg ſhe will accept of a " trifling preſent from me, which I have taken the li- " berty to include in the bill. Come! no words! In " this I will not be contradicted."

" O Sir!"

" O Sir!" (anſwered the lieutenant, catching his hand, as he reached him the bill, and kiſſing it eagerly) " this is too much! My heart will burſt!"—Saying which, he went out of the cabbin, in a ſilence more expreſſive of his ſoul, than all the flights of eloquence.

CHAP. XX.

Hiſtory of a lieutenant of a man of war. A compariſon between the rewards of merit, in the land, and ſea-ſervices; with a remarkable inſtance of a great-man's remembering an old friend. The conſequence of attempting to ſet up for a member of manners, and of a man's not meeting an opportunity of making himſelf remarkable.

WHEN every thing was ſettled, and the packet ſailed, the lieutenant deſired leave to wait upon my maſter; and as ſoon as he entered, " I come " Sir, (ſaid he) to pay you the thanks, which the full- " neſs of my heart would not let me utter before. You " have raiſed me to happineſs from the loweſt ſtate of " deſpair."—

" Hold, my friend!" (anſwered my maſter, taking his hand, and ſqueezing it tenderly) " Speak no more of it, " I conjure you. I am abundantly overpaid for what I " have done, by the pleaſure of having ſerved a man of " merit; and ſhall think you repine at my happineſs in be- " ing able to purchaſe that pleaſure, if I ever hear the " affair mentioned more."

To relieve the lieutenant, whom he ſaw oppreſſed with gratitude, he then changed the converſation to another ſubject, when the lieutenant ſhewed ſo much good ſenſe, and ſolid judgment, that my maſter could not forbear expreſſing his aſtoniſhment, that ſuch a man ſhould have been ſo long unpromoted in the ſervice.

" If

"If you can have patience to hear the ſtory of my "life" (anſwered the lieutenant) "it will ſoon explain "that difficulty to you. My father was an officer in the "army, who was rewarded for the loſs of a leg, and "thirteen years ſervice, with the half-pay of a captain "of foot. As he had a wife and children to maintain "and provide for, he retired to a cheap country, where "he lived in the moſt rigid œconomy in hopes of ſav- "ing, for he could not make any thing, being preclud- "ed from every kind of induſtry, by the profeſſion to "which he had devoted his youth.

"The firſt acquaintance a ſtranger gets in a coun- "try place is the parſon of the pariſh. It was my "father's happineſs to fix his habitation, where there "was a clergyman who would have been a valuable "acquaintance in any place, and who was equally "happy, in the acquiſition of a rational acquaintance "in him. The common intercourſe of neighbour- "hood was therefore ſoon improved between them "into the ſtrongeſt friendſhip, in the intimacy of "which, as my father would often naturally mention "his anxiety for his children, his friend perſuaded him "to breed me, the eldeſt, to the ſea-ſervice, in "which he thought he himſelf might be able to ſerve "me, by his intereſt with ſeveral commanders, with "whom he had been acquainted formerly, when chap- "lain to a man of war. That is the ſervice!" (would the good man ſay, with pleaſure ſparkling in his eye) "That is the ſervice in which merit is never diſ- "regarded. You would not have been laid aſide after "thirty years, to pine upon five ſhillings a day, if you "had been bred to the ſea. No! no! merit is all that "is neceſſary there.

"Such an argument was too flattering to my fa- "ther's hopes to be reſiſted. Though he felt the "evil of not having been bred to buſineſs himſelf, he "was charmed at the thought of his ſon's being placed "in the way of riſing to an higher ſphere, and readily "aſſented to the advice of his friend, who not con- "tent with mere advice inſiſted on taking me home "with him, and giving me ſuch an education, as "ſhould qualify me to make a figure in the profeſſion

"to

" to which he had directed me. " If ever a man of " merit in the ſea-ſervice" (would he often ſay) " fails " of riſing, it is for want, of having had a good " education to found his hopes upon. A mere ſea- " man may work a ſhip, but an Admiral ſhould be a " ſcholar."

" How well this reaſoning was founded experience " daily ſhews; tho' it would be ingratitude in me " to arraign it, as the little taſte for letters, which I " acquired from his care, if it has not contributed to " my advancement, has at leaſt enabled me to ſupport " the ſhock of diſappointment, as well as to avoid many " evils, into which I have ſeen others, who had not " the ſame advantage, fall.

" At ſixteen, (for he inſiſted that it was moſt " wretched policy to turn a boy looſe upon the world " before he had come to the uſe of reaſon, and was " well inſtructed in the principles of morality and re- " ligion, for the ſake of gaining a couple of years " advice:) At ſixteen, I ſay, I was ſent to ſea, pro- " vided with a cheſt of books, and mathematical in- " ſtruments, and a good ſuit of cloaths, not to diſ- " credit the recommendation which my beſt friend " gave me to an Admiral, with whom he had been " moſt intimate, when a lieutenant; and whoſe readi- " neſs to ſerve him in any thing, he would not admit " a doubt of.

" On my preſenting my letter, the Admiral at firſt " had forgot the name, but recollecting himſelf at " length on my mentioning ſome circumſtances which " I had often heard my friend dwell upon with plea- " ſure, " Very true," (ſaid he) " I remember him " now. He made the beſt bowl of punch of any man " in the navy."——

" This was all the notice the *great man* took of " him, or of me on his account, except I ſhould add, " that on his captain's obſerving I ſhould make a good " figure on the quarter deck, I was directly rated a " midſhipman; a favour in which I ſoon found I was " indebted to his caution of ſending me well dreſſed, " much more than to his intereſt.

' Though

'Though I felt this diſappointment of my firſt 'hopes very ſeverely, on my friend's account, as well 'as my own, I could not think of ſhocking him with 'the news, but ſaying in general terms that I had 'been well received, reſolved to apply myſelf to my 'buſineſs, and try whether I could not deſerve that 'favour, which he had failed to procure me.

'As I had been accuſtomed to converſation very 'different from that of thoſe, with whom alone I 'could now converſe, I took every opportunity, 'when off duty, of running to my books. But the 'relief I found from this was for the preſent over-'balanced by the general ridicule, into which it drew 'me; eſpecially as I not only avoided obſcenity, 'ſwearing, and drinking myſelf, but had alſo been 'ſo imprudent as to rebuke others for them. I was 'immediately nick-named *the parſon*, and avoided by 'every one in the ſhip.

'I need not deſcribe to you the ſituation of a *petit* 'officer, inſulted by thoſe below him, ridiculed by 'his equals, and looked down upon with contempt 'by his ſuperiors, who forgot they were ever in his 'ſtation themſelves. I bore it for fifteen years, at 'the end of which time, having the good fortune to 'be ſent to *London*, with a preſs-gang, on purpoſe 'to mortify me, for I always diſliked that particular 'duty, more than any other in the ſervice, on ſeeing 'an advertiſement in the news-papers, that all who 'were qualified by their ſtanding to be lieutenants in 'the navy, ſhould attend to paſs their examination, I 'offered myſelf without any other introduction, or 'intereſt, and was appointed to a ſhip.

'In this ſtation I have now done my duty for five 'and twenty years, without reprehenſion; but as I 'have no *corporation intereſt* to puſh me at home, 'none of the *modern polite accompliſhments*, to recom-'mend me to the favourites of fortune, whom I oc-'caſionally meet in the ſervice, nor have ever had the 'good luck to find an opportunity of making my-'ſelf remarkable, by any action of *eclat*, though in 'itſelf no more than a ſucceſsful blunder, my uniform

'conduct

'conduct and care have paſſed unnoticed, and I re-'main a lieutenant ſtill.'

The circumſtances of this ſtory affected my maſter in the ſtrongeſt manner. He took the lieutenant by the hand, and deſiring him not to deſpair, repeated his promiſe of uſing all his intereſt to ſerve him, of the ſucceſs of which he had no reaſon to doubt.

Nothing particular happened during our voyage. One inſtance though of my maſter's conduct in his military capacity I cannot forbear mentioning, as it ſhews his character in the ſtrongeſt light, which was, that he never interfered in the buſineſs of his officers, but if he happened to ſee any thing which he diſapproved, inſtead of interpoſing his own authority publickly, and giving contrary orders, he always ſpoke privately to the officer on duty, and giving his direction under the appearance of advice, let the alteration proceed as immediately from him, by which means he ſpared him the pain of being found fault with before the men, and conſequently leſſened in their opinion.

This delicacy not only endeared him to them all, but alſo contributed greatly to advance the ſervice. For as every officer knew that he ſhould have the credit, or bear the blame of his own actions, they all exerted themſelves with the utmoſt ardour; whereas on the contrary, where a captain is continually interfering, and leaving nothing for his officers to do, they grow careleſs of courſe, and do nothing, as they know he will arrogate to himſelf the merit of ſucceſs; if they do not even take a malignant pleaſure in any miſcarriage, the blame of which they have ſo juſt an opportunity of throwing upon him.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXI.

An uncommon method of carrying on a war; with the danger of ſpeaking the truth too plainly, at an improper time. CHRYSAL'*s maſter meets his brother. Some account of him. He repreſents certain matters in an odd light.* CHRYSAL *enters into his ſervice. Concluſion of his character.* CHRYSAL *quits his ſervice on an uncommon occaſion, for one, from which he paſſes in the uſual courſe of buſineſs into that of the general.*

WHEN we arrived at the place of our deſtination, we found the ſhore covered with an extenſive incampment, and every thing wearing the appearance of the moſt active war.

The firſt thing my maſter did was of courſe to wait upon the General, whoſe operations he was ſent to aſſiſt. He met him viewing an occaſional fortification which he had cauſed to be raiſed to train his army to, the method of making regular ſieges and attacks; and marking out a piece of ground to be ſowed with vegetables to correct the bad effects of the ſalt proviſions, which his men had lived upon in their paſſage thither, and preſerve them in health.

The account he received from my maſter of the heavy loſs ſuſtained in the expedition from which he had juſt come, gave him viſible pleaſure, as it ſeemed to ſet his own conduct, which was diametrically the reverſe of that obſerved there, in the moſt advantageous light.

'I wonder' (ſaid he, looking around him with an air of conſcious exultation) 'how officers can reconcile it to themſelves to throw away the lives of their men, in ſuch a manner! For my part, I act upon very different principles. I take care not only to give my troops an inſight into all the various branches of

'of the military art, but alſo to keep them in ſuch 'health as may enable them to reap the advantage 'of their experience. There is nothing ſo bad in war 'as precipitation. It was the ſole cauſe of the late 'General's defeat and death.'

'Yes!' (interrupted an officer who ſtood near, and had hearkened to him with evident impatience) 'Delay is full as bad. Your troops want neither 'health nor experience to conquer every oppoſition 'they can poſſibly meet; and will accompliſh the 'end they were ſet upon before your cabbages are 'fit for them to eat, if you will but lead them againſt 'their enemies, and not give them time to retire with 'their effects into places, whither it is impoſſible for 'an army to purſue them, while your men waſte their 'time and ſpirits in the fooliſh parade of mock bat-'tles and ſieges, till they loſe their ardour by delays 'which can anſwer no end, but that of protracting 'the war, and thereby lengthening a lucrative com-'mand.'

Such an attack was quite unexpected, and ſtruck the General with equal ſurprize and indignation, as it touched him in the tendereſt part; however, diſ-ſembling his paſſion, of which he had an abſolute command, 'I would have you to know, Sir,' (ſaid he) 'that I think it the higheſt aſſurance in you to 'attempt cenſuring my conduct, who are ſent merely 'to execute my orders. When I aſk your opinion, 'it will be time enough for you to give it, till then 'obedience, not advice, is what I expect from you. 'If I did not hold it beneath me to ſhew reſentment 'to one ſo abſolutely ſubject to my power, you ſhould 'inſtantly find the effects of this inſolence. But pre-'ſume not on that protection any farther, as you 'regard your ſafety. No man provokes me with im-'punity.'

'N—n—nor me!' (ſputtered the officer, whoſe temper, hot as that of the General was cool, caught fire at the fainteſt ſhadow of offence, and flamed al-moſt to madneſs, as ſoon as rage permitted him to articulate a word) 'Nor m—m—me. I ſeek no

"p—p—

" p—p— protection but my ſword, with which I will " v- v- vindicate my own honour, and make good " what I ſay.—Talk to m—m—me of ſafety, and " im—p—punity !"—

The affair now became ſerious, theſe words ſtriking at the General's ſafety, as well as his honour, and convincing him that he muſt ſupport his dignity by a vigorous effort. " What !" (retorted he, therefore, with a tone and air of offended authority) " Do you " menace me too ? I ſuppoſe you deſign to raiſe a " mutiny in the army, but I'll prevent that."—Then turning to an officer who attended, " Take that mad- " man away" (continued he) " and put him under a " guard, till he recovers his reaſon. Such behaviour " muſt not go unpuniſhed." Then addreſſing himſelf to my maſter with an affected unconcern, as above being moved by what had happened, while the other was led away ſpeechleſs and convulſed with rage, he politely invited him to dinner, an honour, however, which my maſter declined accepting that day, as he was moſt impatient to ſee his brother, who bore a principal command in the army under the General.

The meeting of theſe brothers was truly affecting. The inſtinctive connection of nature had been indiſſolubly cemented between them by the ſacred bond of friendſhip founded on a ſenſe of mutual virtue.

Actuated by the ſame principles they had both devoted themſelves to the profeſſion of arms, in the different ſervices of the land and ſea, as if to avoid the jealouſy of rivalſhip, each being determined to let no competitor take the lead of him, in the road to honour.

Undebauched by affluence, and diſdaining to waſte his youth at home in luxury, when the cauſe of his country called for his aſſiſtance, the elder bravely came to ſeek for glory in theſe inhoſpitable wilds, with as much ardour as my maſter purſued it on his proper element, in order to earn honours which he might tranſmit to his own poſterity, equal to thoſe which his brother inherited from his illuſtrious anceſtors.

When the tender enquiries of affection were reciprocally anſwered, my maſter gratified the curioſity of his

his brother with a particular account of his late dearly bought ſucceſs, cloſing the black detail with ſome remarks on the different conduct of the General of this army, which were much to his advantage.

" Your reflections, my deareſt brother," (anſwered the officer) " are moſt juſt, as things appear to you. " But when you have had an opportunity of ſeeing " farther, I fear you will find reaſon to change your " ſentiments, and that the *delay* here proceeds at bot- " tom from the ſame principle with the *precipitation*, " which produced ſuch terrible effects with you, and " Heaven grant it produce not as bad. Intereſt is the " object every where; and *whether that is purſued by* " *ſacrificing the forces in raſh and ill-conducted attempts*, " *to gain an immediate* PRIZE, *or by letting them melt* " *away in inaction, to accumulate the* PROFITS *of com-* " *mand*, makes no difference in the end.

" I would not be underſtood from this to juſtify " the officer for arraigning the General's conduct, in ſo " publick, and perſonal a manner. Such ungovern- " ed warmth is inexcuſable. Proper reſpect muſt " be paid to thoſe who bear authority, or the effect of " that authority ceaſes; indeed it is not to them, but " to him who delegates the authority, the reſpect is paid. " A general at the head of an army repreſents his ſo- " vereign in the plenitude of his power, and to ſuffer " any ſlight to be ſhewn to his delegated character, " were to betray the truſt of that delegation.

" For this reaſon, I think his puniſhment was ne- " ceſſary, and *therefore* juſt; I wiſh I could add that " it was equally ſo from the injuſtice as from the cir- " cumſtances of the accuſation, which occaſioned it; " but to any one who will not ſhut his eyes it muſt ap- " pear beyond a doubt, that his great crime was ſpeak- " ing too much, and too plain truth; for with all our " boaſted care for the preſervation of the men, their " diſtreſſes are ſuch as have not left me a penny in " my pocket, for I cannot ſhut my hand, where my " heart is opened. In ſhort, I am ſo ſick of the " whole ſcene, that I have ſolicited the command of " a detached party, with which I hope to ſhew that

" the

" the native bravery of *Britons*, when led with ſpirit,
" requires but little experience to enable them to con-
" quer more formidable foes, than naked ſavages, led
" by a few wretched *Frenchmen*, in a condition not
" much better. I ſet out to-morrow morning, and
" think it a particular happineſs that you have arriv-
" ed time enough for me to have this interview with
" you."

The reſt of their converſation is not neceſſary to be repeated, as it turned upon their own domeſtick concerns. This much only it is but juſt for me to obſerve, that it ſhewed their conduct in the intercourſe and relations of private life to be as amiable, as that in their publick capacities were exalted; and proved that moral virtue is the beſt foundation for true heroiſm —— My maſter's brother having in the courſe of their converſation intimated his having ſome preſent occaſion for money, I here entered into his ſervice.

You may judge that I remained not long in the poſſeſſion of my new maſter. His brother had no ſooner left him, than he paid me away, among a large number of my fellows, to a merchant for ſome additions, which he thought it neceſſary to make at his own expence to the proviſions made by the publick, for the ſupport and comfort of his men, through the fatigues and inconveniences of a campaign in an uninhabited country.

The ſentiments expreſſed by my maſter, in the effuſion of his ſoul to his brother, ſhewed his character in the juſteſt light; I ſhall therefore only add, that as he acted from principles firmly eſtabliſhed on the invariable baſis of reaſon, there was no danger of his deviating from the paths in which he ſet out.

So bright a proſpect made it a pain to me to quit his ſervice ſo ſuddenly; but I have ſince met many mortifications of the ſame kind, my ſtay being always ſhorteſt, in the beſt hands.

My continuance, though from another motive, was not much longer with my next maſter, the merchant, who in the common courſe of ſoliciting permiſſion for a ſhip of his to ſail with a cargo, that muſt be ruined

by delay, an embargo having been laid on all the ſhipping in the place, in the unfathomable wiſdom of the ruling powers, to promote ſome unintelligible plan of ſervice, gave me to the General's clerk, from whom in the ſame courſe of buſineſs, I came into the ſervice of the General.

END OF THE FIRST BOOK.

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

BOOK THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL'S *master makes some characteristick reflections. He is surprized at the officer's refusing to make up matters; and gives a particular reason for some people's rising in the world. An extraordinary personage enters to him. Description of him. He gives a character of the native* AMERICANS; *and offers some interesting remarks on the return they make to the treatment they meet with; and on the practice of forming in the closet, plans of operation for armies in the field. Odd reason why the* AMERICANS *are desirous of gold.* CHRYSAL *changes his service.*

WHEN I entered into the possession of my new master, he was waiting in his tent, with the most anxious impatience, for the return of a person

whom he had employed to mediate as of himſelf, between him and the officer, whoſe preſumption in daring to find fault with his meaſures he had thought proper to puniſh in the manner I juſt now mentioned.

His reflections on an affair that ſtruck ſo dangerouſly at his pride and avarice, the ruling paſſions of his heart, could not be very agreeable; but the ſight of the money gave them a more pleaſing turn. Having aſked the clerk a few queſtions in the way of buſineſs, and diſmiſſed him, he took the purſe and weighing it in his hand, "Aye!" (ſaid he with delight gliſtening in his eyes) "this will do. This embargo was a lucky "thought. Let who will complain of the hindrance "it is to the buſineſs of the publick, it advances mine; "and that is all I care for. I came here to ſerve my-"ſelf, and not the publick; and as there is neither "plunder nor contributions to be got by activity, I "muſt try what I can do another way. I ſhewed my "dexterity at hunting ſavages in the mountains of "my own country; and have no deſire to renew the "chaſe here. It was neceſſary for me then to do ſome-"thing that ſhould make me remarkable, and gain "favour with thoſe, who I ſaw muſt prevail in the "end, and therefore I ſpared no trouble nor fatigue, "neither friend nor foe, to convince them of my at-"tachment; and in reward they have now given me "this command, in conducting which I muſt uſe delay "to reap the advantages of my former activity. *Fabius* "ſaved *Rome* by delay; let me but make my fortune "by it, and I envy him not his fame. I prefer this "ſound" (chinking the purſe) "to the empty noiſe of "publick acclamation, the ſhouts of a giddy mob, who "bleſs and curſe with the ſame breath, and without "knowing why they do either. No! no! this is the "muſick that charms my ear."

His meditations were broken off here, by the gentleman he waited for, who informed him that the officer would come to no terms of accommodation; nor even accept of his liberty till he ſhould be acquitted by a court-martial, and have juſtice done him for the affront offered to his honour.

Such

Such an account was far from being agreeable to my master, who, for obvious reasons wished to have every thing to go on as quietly as possible. After some pause, 'That is a damn'd affair,' (said he) 'but we 'must now e'en make the best we can of it. Who 'could have thought that a countryman of my own 'would have proved so refractory? We have always 'been remarkable for hanging well together. *One* 'and all was the word, or we could never have done 'such great matters. If it is once found out, that 'we can be divided, we shall soon lose our conse-'quence; and every man be reduced to *the poor pros-'pect of depending on his own merit*. However, since 'he will not accept of his liberty here, he shall e'en 'go home a prisoner, and recover it there as well as 'he can. I am on the right side; and don't fear but 'my friends will bring me through more than this; 'especially as it is a national concern to us all alike. 'In the mean time, we must double our diligence to 'make hay while the sun shines.'

The gentleman, who was in all his secrets, acknowledged the force of his reasoning; and was going to communicate to him some new strokes of management, when word was brought my master, that a person, to whom he could not be properly denied, desired to see him.

There was something in the whole appearance of this person that struck me with the strongest curiosity the moment I saw him. His stature, above the common size of man, was form'd with the justest proportion, and denoted ability to execute the most difficult attempts, which the determined and enterprizing spirit that animated his looks could urge him to. His open countenance, in which humanity and reason attempered resolution, shewed the genuine workings of his soul; and his whole deportment was the unaffected ease of natural liberty, above the hypocritical formality of studied rules of behaviour, devised only to deceive.

As soon as he entered, 'I am come, Sir,' (said he, throwing himself carelessly into a chair, and cutting short all that parade of ceremony, on the punctilious observation of which my master prided himself not a

little) 'to receive your orders. It is time, I ſhould 'join my people, who grow impatient, as the enemy 'have begun to ſtir, and I never chuſe to baulk their 'firſt ardour. There is nothing like taking men in the 'humour to fight; and before they have time to 'conſider too much about it.'

'I deſign Sir,' (anſwered my maſter, with a ſolemnity, and affectation of politeneſs, which made the ſtrongeſt contraſt to the blunt freedom of the other) 'to call a council of war very ſoon; at which I ſhall 'be glad of your aſſiſtance, to form a plan of operations for the campaign. When that is done, and all 'proper meaſures concerted, you ſhall ſet out. *Precipitation* is very dangerous, and directly contrary 'to the principles of the *regular art of war*, by which 'I mean to proceed. The Savages ſhall find ſome 'difference between my conduct, and that of my predeceſſors. They ſhan't ſurprize me on my march; 'nor draw me into an ambuſh, among woods and 'mountains.'

'As to the art of war, Sir,' (replied the other) 'I know no more of it, than what Heaven and common ſenſe have taught me, which is to find out the 'enemy, and beat them as ſoon as I can, my plan for 'which is always directed by preſent circumſtances; 'nor do I know how one can be formed to effect, any 'other way.'

'Your exploits have always been well executed:' (returned my maſter with an air, and tone of importance, as deſigning to ſay ſomething that ſhould raiſe him in the opinion of the other) 'But you have hitherto acted rather in the low ſphere of a *partiſan*, 'than as a general. The duty of a general comprehends much more than what you mention, as you 'ſhall have an opportunity of learning before we take 'the field. I intend to go through a regular courſe 'of military operations to inſtruct my officers, and 'diſcipline the men. Your *Heaven-taught* generals 'may beat the enemy; but that is the leaſt part of the 'care and duty of a general now a days. The very 'leaſt part.'——

'And

'And pray, Sir, how much time will this courſe of 'operations take up?'—

'I cannot exactly ſay; but not above a month or 'two, I imagine.'—

'A month or two! why, Sir, I hope we ſhall have 'done the moſt troubleſome part of our work by 'that time; or elſe I do not know what may be the 'conſequence. For, to be plain with you, theſe 'delays will never do with the *uncivilized Americans*, 'who judge of things only by common ſenſe; and 'cannot be made to comprehend this way of carrying 'on a war, by lying ſtill in a camp and doing nothing. 'They have formed very diſadvantageous notions of 'the delays already made; and think a man who does 'not advance to fight his enemy is afraid of him; and 'therefore if they are not led to action directly, they 'will deſert, ſo that if I ſtay a month or two here at 'ſchool to learn a leſſon I may never have occaſion 'for, I muſt find other forces to put it in practice 'with.'——

'Cannot you deviſe any reaſon, that may account for 'your ſtaying, to their ſatisfaction?'——

'Really, Sir, not I! I never was good at deviſing 'reaſons, deſtitute of truth, in my life; and have 'entirely forgot the practice ſince I have converſed 'with the *Americans*, who are far from being ſuch 'fools, as they are too generally thought to be. 'Though they have not the advantages of learning, 'they ſee by the light of natural reaſon through all 'the boaſted wiles of policy; and as they never mean 'deceit themſelves, deteſt it in others, however ſpe-'ciouſly diſguiſed; nor even place confidence a ſecond 'time, where it has been once abuſed.'—

'How! the *Americans* never meant deceit! Surely 'you muſt know better; they are the moſt perfidious 'deceitful Savages, that burthen the earth; and it 'would be an advantage to the world, if the whole 'race of them was exterminated.'

'Such of them as converſe much with *civilized* 'Europeans, it is too true, learn many things from 'them, which are a diſgrace to their own *Savage* na-'ture, as you call it. But I ſpeak of the general

'disposition of the people. Treat them with candour, probity, and tenderness; and they will return them tenfold, in all their intercourse with you; as on the other hand they seldom fail to retort the contrary treatment with severe usury. Nor are they to be blamed In all their dealings with the *Europeans*, they find themselves imposed upon in the grossest manner; in a manner not fit to be practised even with brutes. Their sensibility is quick, and their passions ungoverned, perhaps ungovernable. How then can it be wondered at, that they make returns in kind, whenever they find an opportunity;' and become the most dangerous enemies? 'Whereas if those passions were attached by good treatment, they would be the most affectionate, steady and careful friends. I speak from experience. I treat them as rational creatures; and they behave as such to me. I never deceive them; and they never deceive me. I do them all the good offices in my power; and they return them manifold. In short, I practise to them the behaviour which I wish to meet from them, and am never disappointed. All the evils which have been suffered from them have proceeded from the unhappy error, of thinking ourselves possessed of a superiority over them, which nature, that is Heaven, has not given us. They are our fellow-creatures; and in general above our level, in the virtues which give real pre-eminence, however despicably we think of, and injuriously we treat them.'———

'They are much obliged to your character of them at least; whatever others may be And pray, Sir, what is it you would have me to do, to preserve the good opinion of these most *virtuous people*.'—

'I presume not, Sir, to say what is proper to you to do. All I desire is that you will dismiss me directly, in a capacity of making good my promises to my friends; and by the time you say you shall be ready to move with the army, I hope to give a good account of the enemy.'

'That,

'That, Sir, I have no thought of. However, as you 'are ſo deſirous of going, I ſhall not delay you. I'll 'form a plan of operations for you this very day.'

'For me, Sir! I do not underſtand you. How 'can you know what will be proper, or poſſible for 'me to do, at the diſtance of many hundred miles, 'in a country you are an utter ſtranger to. In *Europe*, where war, like a game of cheſs, is *played*, 'as I may ſay, entirely by art, that method of plan-'ning in the cloſet the operations of the field may do 'perhaps; but then it is neceſſary that each ſide 'ſhould play the game by the ſame rules. A body of '*Americans*, who know nothing of the art of war 'but fighting, might be apt to move ſo irregularly, 'as to diſconcert the whole ſcheme of the *game*. In-'deed by what I can judge of the matter, that very 'method of planning the operations of a campaign is 'advantageous only to the general, as it prolongs 'the war, and conſequently the emoluments of com-'mand, by tying up his hand from availing himſelf 'of any unforeſeen circumſtances, in his favour. 'Whereas if armies were ſent out only to fight, as 'formerly before the *improvements* in the art of war, 'the diſpute would ſoon be decided, and even the 'vanquiſhed better off, than the victors are at preſent, 'whoſe riches and ſtrength are ſo exhauſted at this 'dilatory way of proceeding, that they are not the 'better for their ſucceſs. I hope, Sir, you do not 'take offence at the plainneſs of my ſpeech. I have 'ſo long been accuſtomed to converſe with *Savages*, 'who ſpeak juſt what they think, that I am become 'quite a ſtranger to that *diſſimulation*, which is called '*politeneſs*, among *civilized* nations; and muſt make 'uſe of words, in their original intention of conveying 'my thoughts.'

'Not in the leaſt, Sir! I like your free manner 'much. It is in the character of a ſoldier. I will order 'every thing to be got ready for you directly; and 'you ſhall go as ſoon as you pleaſe; at full liberty to 'act as you ſee proper.'——

'I hope, Sir, I will not make a bad uſe of that li-
'berty. And pray, among the other things, do not
'forget to order me ſome money!'———

'Money, Sir! What occaſion can you poſſibly have
'for money, among *Savages*, who do not know the va-
'lue of it?'

'Why really, Sir, that queſtion is natural. But
'the matter is, the *Savages*, who come among the
'*Europeans*, ſee every thing governed by gold, in ſuch a
'manner that they have taken it into their heads, we
'worſhip it; and therefore have become as eager for it
'as ourſelves, in hopes of gaining an aſcendency over
'us, when they have got our god in their poſſeſſion.'

A conſcious heart takes to itſelf more than was ever meant. The dry manner in which this was ſaid touched my maſter to the quick, and made him not deſire to purſue the converſation any farther with ſuch a free ſpeaker, nor have ſo nice an obſerver longer about him, to pry into the motives of his actions. Giving him therefore the money he required, he wiſh'd him ſucceſs with a forced politeneſs, and diſmiſſed him to prepare for his departure.

It was a pleaſure to me to change my ſervice on this occaſion; as the idea I had conceived of my new maſter, both from his appearance and converſation, promiſed me ſome variety, and my curioſity was heartily ſurfeited with the regular art of war.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

The manner in which CHRYSAL*'s maſter was received by his ſubjects. Antiquated principles on which his authority was founded His odd opinions and conduct in ſome important matters, with the conſequences.*

AS ſoon as every thing was ready my maſter ſet out for home, where he arrived without meeting any thing remarkable in his journey, as you may ſuppoſe, through uninhabited deſarts.

The reception he met with from his people was the very reverſe of what *Sovereigns* uſually meet. They welcomed him with ſincere joy and reſpect, which they expreſſed in the overflowing of their hearts, without ceremony or parade: I ſay, 'Sovereigns,' as he really enjoyed that power in its moſt rational ſenſe, his will being a law to all around him, *becauſe they always found it juſt, and advantageous to them.*

Though the account which he gave my late maſter of his manner of treating his people ſhew'd a juſt foundation for his power over them, I found that it depended not on that alone. His authority, like that of the firſt rulers of the earth, was founded alſo on the relations of nature, and ſupported by its ſtrongeſt ties, he being literally the father of his ſubjects, the king of his own family.

To explain this it is neceſſary to inform you, that on his fixing his reſidence among theſe *uncivilized* nations, in order to gain an influence over them the more readily, he had laid aſide all ſuch rules of conduct as ſeemed to him to be contradictory to natural reaſon, and the publick good, however forcibly enjoined for particular convenience.

Among theſe the chief was the cuſtom of reſtraining the commerce between the ſexes, and confining individuals to each other, after the deſire which firſt brought

brought them together had ceaſed: As he ſaw that the ſtrongeſt paſſion which governs the human heart is that deſire (for his philoſophy was not refined enough to ſuggeſt one thought of governing the paſſions) and as the continuation of the ſpecies depends entirely on the gratification of it, he held every oppoſition to it to be moſt criminal in itſelf, and detrimental to the publick good, (properly the firſt object of every civil inſtitution, and which can be promoted no way ſo effectually, as by promoting population) and therefore exerted all his influence to encourage that commerce, under ſuch reſtrictions only, as were evidently neceſſary to procure the great end of it, the propagation of the ſpecies. He gave liberty to every man to converſe with as many females as he pleaſed; and to quit them whenever he thought proper, provided they were not pregnant. To the women the former liberty could not be extended, as the uſe of it would defeat the deſign; or, where it had not immediately that effect, cauſe confuſion, and prevent both paternal care, and filial duty, by the uncertainty of deſcent: But the latter inſtance they enjoyed equally with the men, being allowed to chuſe whom they liked, and if not pregnant, quit them at pleaſure, for others, without reproach or ſhame, the offspring of all which connections were to remain with the fathers.

I ſhall not ſay whether reaſon originally ſuggeſted this ſyſtem to him; or (as is often the caſe) whether he ſought for reaſons to ſupport the dictates of inclination. But be it which it would, the effect was the ſame. His ſubjects encreaſed in an uncommon degree; and he founded, like the patriarchs of old, an authority on the juſtice of all principles, voluntary conſent, over a people inſeparably linked to him, and to each other, by the ſtrongeſt ties of nature, as being by this complicated commerce in the ſtricteſt ſenſe one family; for, diſdaining to make laws for others, which he would not obſerve himſelf, (like too many of his brother legiſlators) he had enforced his precepts ſo powerfully by his example, that there was ſcarce an houſe in any of the tribes around him, from which he had

not

not taken a temporary mate, and added a child of his to their number.

That his reception, as I have obſerved, ſhould be moſt cordial from ſuch ſubjects is not to be wondered at. They flocked about him on his arrival, and hailing him with one voice by every tender relation of nature, brother, father, ſon, huſband, ſhewed an affection too ſublime to be expreſſed by formal rules, and impoſſible to be ſeen without ſympathizing in it.

When this tribute was paid to nature, he called the elders of the people together, and diſtributed among them the preſents which he had received for that purpoſe, gave them an account of the mighty army ſent by his Sovereign againſt the enemy, and propoſed to them to aſſiſt its operations.

There required not many arguments to confirm their confidence, in one who had never deceived them. They readily and ſincerely aſſented to his propoſal, and ſending to invite all his neighbours to join them, ſeparated to make the very little preparations neceſſary for perſons who were ſtrangers to luxury, and knew no wants but thoſe of nature.

CHAP. III.

CHRYSAL deſcribes his maſter's habitation and family. He makes an uncommon progreſs. The manner in which he found the females of his houſhold engaged. Remarks on FINERY. *Account of their amuſements, with the manner in which they uſually ended. The method by which* CHRYSAL'*s maſter kept peace in his family.*

AS ſoon as my maſter had thus concluded the buſineſs of his publick character, he retired to devote a few minutes to his domeſtic concerns.

His habitation was built on an eminence by the ſide of a rivulet, the banks of which were covered with a number of neat little cottages, inhabited by the females

than *white* and *red*. The ſame vanity is the motive of all, and all produce the ſame effect of admiration; as in things equally unſupported by reaſon, cuſtom and caprice bear equal ſway. The difference in the means therefore makes none in the end; at leaſt none to the diſadvantage of the perſons of whom I ſpeak, as it certainly is more abſurd to laviſh treaſures, that might be ſo much better employed, to a worthleſs purpoſe which cheaper bawbles would anſwer as well.

The amuſements, in which they were engaged, were as whimſical as their dreſſes. Some ſkipping about, deſcribing various figures in their motions, till want of breath and wearineſs obliged them to ſit down. Others, and theſe the greateſt number, were employed in chucking ſhells or pebbles from the brook, into holes dug in the ſand, for prizes of bits of tin, or braſs, which game they applied themſelves to with the greateſt eagerneſs and anxiety, and many were ſo expert at, as to ſtrip their antagoniſts of all their hoards, often indeed not without the aſſiſtance of chicanery and deceit: And a few of the eldeſt, and thoſe who had nothing to ſtake at play, gathered up and down into little ſets, and entertained themſelves with making remarks upon the reſt, not always dictated by good-nature or truth; while the miſtreſs of the cottage buſied herſelf in adjuſting ceremonials, ſettling her company in their ſeveral amuſements, and ſerving them with milk, and broth, and tobacco, the fatigue of which office ſhe never repined at, as her conſequence was eſtabliſhed by the number of her gueſts.

Though meer amuſement was the obvious end of theſe meetings, other objects were generally purſued, and other conſequences produced by them. Intrigues were commenced, and often compleated; and trifling as the prizes were for which they contended, emulation and avarice agitated the paſſions, and ſet the competitors together by the ears, till they almoſt clawed out each other's eyes.

Their ſports were at length beginning to take their uſual turn. The tempers of the loſers became ſoured; and the detection of ſome *deep* ſtrokes of play gave riſe to altercations, which would ſoon have been followed.

lowed by blows; but my maſter interpoſed his authority and put an end to their diſputes, when the party broke up; ſome retiring to keep the aſſignations they had made in the warmth of their inclinations, and the reſt to calculate their winnings, or deviſe ſchemes for retrieving their loſſes, at their next meeting; and my maſter having ſingled out the happy favourite of that night, repaired with her to his own habitation, without any of the reſt taking offence, or even particular notice of the preference, as they had it in their power to ſupply their loſs elſewhere.

I have obſerved your aſtoniſhment at this whole ſcene, eſpecially at my maſter's hardineſs in expecting to be happy among a number of women, and attempting to keep them in order together, when one, in your opinion, is more than any man can manage; but what will it be, when I tell you that the number often amounted to hundreds; and that he never had recourſe to any kind of ſeverity, in his conduct to them?

To comprehend this, it is neceſſary for you to conſider, that moſt of, if not all, the uneaſineſſes which imbitter the life of man ariſe from an officious intruſion into the uneaſineſſes of others, or an over-weening partiality to himſelf, that makes him expect treatment, which he does not give, and take offence where none is meant him, for matters not worth his being offended at; an obſervation that will hold in every ſtate publick and private; among *governors*, as well as *governed*.

His rule then was never to take part in their diſputes among themſelves, nor offence at their infidelity to his bed, of which he himſelf ſet them the example. This diſarmed them of that *perverſeneſs, which is the ſex's moſt offenſive weapon*. They remained conſtant to him, becauſe they were not reſtrained from being otherwiſe, whenever they pleaſed; nor did they trouble him with their diſputes, becauſe they ſaw he would not be troubled at them.

CHAP.

panions in it, particularly that of a chaplain of a regiment, who had taken ſuch offence at the immorality of the army, and the uncomfortable way of living in thoſe ſavage countries, that he had hired a ſubſtitute, at a cheap rate, to do his duty, and was returning home to enjoy a life more agreeable to the delicacy of his character and inclinations, and exert his talents to more advantage in paying court to his patrons, than in reforming ſoldiers or converting ſavages.

Extremes are never laſting: The violence of my miſtreſs's grief had been too much for nature to ſupport, and was beginning to abate of itſelf, when my late maſter awoke another paſſion, that would ſoon have ſupplanted it; and though he did not purſue his advantage as far as he might have done, he had opened her heart, and inſpired a warmth ready to receive any other impreſſion.

As the chaplain's function, and her rank, not to omit the accompliſhments of both, ſeemed to point them to each other as the moſt proper companions, it was not ſtrange that they ſhould ſoon grow intimate, nor that their intimacy ſhould be inſenſibly improved into a tender paſſion. They made *tete a tete* parties, at games which no one elſe in the place knew how to play with them. They talked of all the places of pleaſurable reſort in England, and of the amuſements purſued at them: And they raiſed their own conſequence in the eyes of each other, by boaſting of acquaintances with perſons they knew only by name.

Such uncommon accompliſhments were not without effect. Each took the tales of the other upon credit, becauſe their own met the ſame complaiſance; and found a pleaſure in being deceived, by one whom it was an equal pleaſure to deceive.

But this was not the only thing that advanced their mutual influence upon each other. All human excellence is but comparative. Though far from being beautiful, they were the neareſt to being ſo; though far from being well bred, they knew moſt of the common ceremonies in which good breeding is by many thought to conſiſt, but which really are the incumbrances

brances of it, of any perſons there; and conſequently appeared to enjoy thoſe advantages in the higheſt degree. They regulated the aſſemblies, they laid down the rules of play, they made faſhions; in a word, their opinion was the law in every matter of polite amuſement and concern.

Thus *cut out* for each other, it was impoſſible for this accompliſhed pair not to come together. They were accordingly married, not more to the grief of their reſpective admirers, than the joy of their rivals, the bride forgetting her grief for a dead, in the arms of a living huſband, and the happy bridegroom pleaſing himſelf with the thought that the high accompliſhments of his lady would encreaſe his intereſt with his noble patrons.

To crown their happineſs, in a few days after they were married an *Engliſh* man of war put in there, in its way home, the captain of which politely offered them their paſſage. Such an opportunity was not to be miſſed: They accepted his offer with the greateſt joy, and in return made a *party* and entertainment for him, when he won *me* from my miſtreſs at a game of *brag*, the only game indeed at which he thought himſelf a match for her.

Though I had no reaſon to regret leaving her ſervice, my preſent change gave me no great pleaſure, as it wanted even recommendation of novelty, my new maſter being the captain, with whom I had left the *Spaniſh* coaſt, who had at length been made ſo happy, as to be ordered home.

CHAP. VI.

CHRYSAL *arrives in* ENGLAND. *His maſter is ſaluted by a ſight not very pleaſing. The hiſtory of the unfortunate hero of the day opens ſome myſterious ſcenes.* THE OBVIOUS USE OF COUNCILS OF WAR.

(CHRYSAL's *maſter having in the courſe of his voyage home given offence to his officers, by his prudential regard to his own ſafety; to obviate any bad conſequences which might attend their complaining to his ſuperiors he reſolved to employ* CHRYSAL's *mediation in his favour, as ſoon as he ſhould arrive in* ENGLAND.—*Vol.* I. *Chap.* X.)

His arrival in *England* preſented him with a ſcene, that confirmed this reſolution, and made him wiſh he had not been in ſuch haſte to return. On his entering the harbour, he found the boats of all the men of war there drawn up around one ſhip, in which was diſplayed the dreadful ſignal of the execution of the commander. The ſight appalled his ſoul, conſcience anticipating the ſtroke of juſtice, and taking this as an omen of his own fate.

He had not time to brood over theſe gloomy reflections long, when an officer came on board him with an order to attend the execution in his boat, along with the other captains, which he obeyed, in a ſtate of mind ſcarce leſs unhappy than that of the criminal.

As ſoon as the bloody work was done, he waited on the chief commander, where the melancholy, in every face he met, was far from relieving the anxiety of his mind. He could have no pleaſure in ſuch company. When he had anſwered a few general queſtions of courſe, he went away to the ſhip of a captain of his intimate acquaintance, to learn ſome account of this ſhocking ſcene, for he had not had reſolution to make any enquiry about it; nor even to attend to the converſation

verſation of every one around him, which would have explained the whole.

After mutual congratulations on their meeting, my maſter ſignified his curioſity, which his friend promiſed to gratify *over their bottle*, as ſoon as they ſhould be alone after dinner.

Accordingly, when *the coaſt was clear*, 'You deſire information in an affair, (ſaid he) 'that has given 'our corps the deepeſt wound we have ever received. 'The circumſtances are many, and myſterious; but 'I will ſtrive to give you a notion of it in as few 'words as poſſible, for it can be no pleaſure to either 'of us to dwell upon ſuch a ſubject.

'In the beginning of the war, ſoon after you went 'to *America*, the unfortunate man who has this day 'fallen a ſacrifice to the humour of the times, was 'ſent out with a fleet to counteract the ſchemes of the 'enemy, and relieve a fortreſs of ours which they 'were then beſieging. (This was the purport of his '*public orders*; but it will appear to you preſently, 'that he muſt have received *private* ones, of a very 'different nature, from thoſe who at that time had 'the conduct of affairs.)

'Inſtead of making the expedition neceſſary to have 'carried his orders into execution with effect, he 'trifled away the time here, in ſuch a ſhameful manner, uſing every frivolous excuſe he could deviſe to 'delay his departure, that the voice of the publick 'was raiſed againſt him; and it was found neceſſary 'to appoint another to the command in his place in 'order to ſilence the clamour; but unfortunately for 'him, he ſailed the very day before his appointed 'ſucceſſor was to have ſet out to ſuperſede him.

'The ſame dilatory conduct threw a damp upon 'every thing he attempted to do. He ſeemed reſolved upon nothing; but tho' he was inveſted 'with the fulleſt powers to act as he ſaw proper himſelf, called councils of war to deliberate upon every 'the moſt trifling occaſion, that he might have the 'ſanction of their advice to excuſe his neglect, and 'often direct diſobedience of his orders; for you well,

'abuſe with the rage of a licentious populace, bro-
'ken looſe from all bounds, could ſuggeſt, brought to
'his trial, found guilty of *neglecting to do all in his*
'*power to deſtroy the enemy*, and for that crime has
'this day ſuffered the ſentence of the law; a ſentence
'not more unexpected by him, and extraordinary in
'itſelf, than in the manner it was paſſed; and after-
'wards attempted to be reverſed, by thoſe who had
'paſſed it, when they reflected on the danger of eſta-
'bliſhing a precedent, that might one day come home
'to themſelves.

'For perſuaded (perhaps by their knowledge of
'the true motives of his conduct) that nothing more
'was meant by the trial, than to amuſe the publick,
'they reſolved to act their parts in the farce, and
'found him guilty, as I have ſaid, of ſuch a part
'only of the charge againſt him, as common ſenſe
'could never conceive puniſhable with death, it be-
'ing impoſſible to acquit him abſolutely of the whole
'without involving themſelves in his guilt, by which
'means, they expected to ſave both his life, and
'their own credit. But ſuch *trimming* ſeldom anſwers;
'*the tables were now turned*; and it was reſolved to
'carry even this lame ſentence into execution, with
'the utmoſt ſeverity.

'Alarmed at a meaſure, ſo contrary to their ex-
'pectations, his judges were driven to their wit's
'end; and from a provident regard to *themſelves* left
'nothing unattempted to ſave *him*. They retracted,
'as far as was in their power, their own judgment!
'they petitioned the miniſtry! they applied to the
'whole body of the legiſlature. They prayed! they
'expoſtulated! they wept! but all was in vain. His
'fate was determined; and they only drew upon
'themſelves that contempt, which ſuch inconſiſtency
'deſerved.

'From this general account of his conduct it muſt
'have appeared to you, that he acted by *ſecret* or-
'ders, directly oppoſite to his *publick* ones, as no
'man however proſtituted in principle, however in-
'fatuated by fear, (neither of which, it was well
'known, was his caſe) could otherwiſe poſſibly have

'acted

acted in such a manner, the inevitable consequences of which were disgrace and death. But if any doubt should remain on your mind, from the inconsistency of man's actions at different times, the least attention of the following circumstances will effectually remove it.

'Repeated informations of the enemy's design upon that place had been sent to those in power, for a considerable time before; but no notice was taken of them to reinforce the garrison; or even order the officers, regularly belonging to it, to attend their duty, till the siege was actually begun; when this unfortunate man was sent, but so late, that the common impediments of contrary winds might very possibly have delayed him so long as to defeat the design of his going, even had he exerted himself with the greatest ardour.

'Had it also been really intended that he should reinforce the garrison, a force proper for that purpose would have been sent directly from home, without subjecting him to the further delay of stopping for it at another place, where it might not be to be spared, as proved to be the case.

'And lastly, had he not had secret reasons, which he thought sufficient to justify his conduct, it is not to be imagined that he would have wasted the time before he sailed; that he would have accepted the refusal of the commanding officer of the fortress, from which he was to have taken the reinforcement; that he would not have attempted at least to throw some relief into the place; and that he would not have sought the enemy's fleet, when he had the fairest prospect of defeating it; for the tenour of his former life acquitted him, as I have observed, of all suspicion of cowardice or traiterous correspondence with the foes of his country.

'His conduct at, and after his trial, confirmed these remarks. Depending on support from those in power, he neglected the only measure, prudence could have suggested for his defence, which was to have retorted the charge of his miscarriage upon

'his very accuſers, and perplexed the cauſe with 'ſuch a variety of matter about *diſobedience to ſignals*, '*and breach of diſcipline*, as to blind the world and 'bewilder his judges, ſo that they ſhould be glad to 'have acquitted him, if only to get rid of the plague 'of the enquiry; a method, which experience had 'ſhewn to be effectual, in as flagrant a caſe as his. 'And even after he was condemned, his behaviour 'proved that he expected a pardon to the laſt mo-'ment, for a crime which he had committed in obe-'dience to their orders. Why he did not produce 'thoſe orders, in his vindication, muſt have been, 'that they were only verbal ones; which in the blind 'luſt of miniſterial confidence and favour, he had been 'weak enough to take.

'The reaſon of his being ſo baſely deſerted is too 'obvious. The adminiſtration of thoſe, who had 'employed him, had been ſuch a ſeries of blunders, '(not to call it by a ſeverer name!) that they had not 'only been ſupplanted by another ſet, who promiſed 'better things; but were alſo obliged to give him 'up, *as a ſin-offering* to the rage of the people; as pro-'tecting, and pardoning him would have implied a 'participation of his guilt: And in this light the 'other party viewed it ſo ſtrongly, that they exerted 'all their ſtrength to have ſaved him, in hopes of be-'ing able by his means to gain a clue, to guide them 'through ſome of thoſe labyrinths of iniquitous and 'falſe policy, which they ſuſpected, but could not 'otherwiſe detect, to the entire overthrow of their 'rivals.

'This ſo abſolutely reverſed the whole ſcene, that 'they who ſhould have ſupported, now found them-'ſelves obliged to cruſh him, in their own defence, 'which as it was the moſt popular meaſure, they were 'ſtill able to do.

'There is but one thing more neceſſary for me to 'add; and that is the motive for their giving him 'ſuch ſecret orders; which, as far as reaſon can 'judge in ſuch dark, confuſed myſteries, muſt have 'been this.

'Provoked

'Provoked at the repeated inſults, and injuſtice of 'the *French*, the miniſtry here had precipitately 'plunged themſelves into a war, without being pre- 'pared, or even determined to purſue it; and then 'like a parcel of children who have exhauſted all 'their ſtrength and reſolution, in one ſpiteful aſſault, 'ſtood in a ſtate of ſtupefaction, utterly at a loſs how 'to proceed, or retreat; till rouzed at length by the 'preparations and menaces of the enemy, they un- 'luckily blundered in their fright upon the wretched 'expedient of letting them take this fortreſs, that for 'the recovery of it, they might have a pretence for 'giving up to them thoſe places about which the diſ- 'pute began; and ſo *botch up* a peace any way, to 'get rid of a war, they found themſelves unable to 'manage.

'The conſequence of this notable ſtroke of policy 'was, the ſpirit of the people was inflamed to ſuch 'a degree, by this diſgrace upon their arms, that 'they have puſhed on the war with a reſolution, lit- 'tle ſhort of madneſs; and the ſcheme, which the mi- 'niſters had ſo wiſely laid for their eſcape, only ſealed 'their ruin.

'This, my friend, is a ſhort but juſt ſketch of this 'unfortunate affair, to which I ſhall only add one 'circumſtance to prove what I ſaid of his being *ſa- 'crificed to the humour of the times*. The officer who 'commanded in the fortreſs which was beſieged, and 'who in the defence of it had betrayed a want of eve- 'ry qualification neceſſary for ſuch an office, *but cou- 'rage*, and had even let that be over-ruled by the 'inſtances of his officers, who were tired of fatigues 'and dangers from which they ſaw no proſpect of re- 'lief, to ſurrender it at laſt, without any abſolute 'neceſſity, was loaded with honours of every kind 'in reward of a merit merely negative at beſt; that 'is, for not having done the very worſt in his power, 'and ſurrendered it at firſt, without making any de- 'fence.

'I have thus gratified your curioſity, in the beſt 'manner in my power. If I have made any miſtakes 'they are not thoſe of intention; but have proceed-

'ed from the inability of reaſon to trace ſuch myſte-
'rious actions to their real motives. One obſerva-
'tion though, I know, I cannot be miſtaken in, which
'is that this affair has given *a wound to our corps*, (as
'I obſerved before) *which it can never recover.* For
'after ſuch an example, what officer, of any rank, can
'expect to eſcape ſhould he neglect to do his duty, in
'the fulleſt manner, however powerful his private mo-
'tives to the contrary may be.'

'For my own part, I cannot ſay, it yet affects me
'much. I am poor; and therefore muſt puſh. If I
'ever have the good luck to be other, I know the
'conſequence; and will rather quit the ſervice, than
'hazard being ſhot, as I know muſt be any man's fate,
'who ſhall hereafter be found to fail in the performance
'of his duty, from a prudential regard to the preſervati-
'on of his life, or fortune; however great that fortune,
'or powerful his family." And ſo *here's to you, neck*
'*or nothing* is now the word."

The effect which this whole account had upon my maſter may be eaſily conceived. He *pledged* his friend though without naming *the toaſt*; and aſſenting to his remarks, by an heavy ſigh, took his leave without ſaying a word.

CHAP. VIII.

CHRYSAL changes his ſervice. He gets a view of a court of CIVIL JUDICATURE, *on an extraordinary occaſion. Some reflections out of the common cant on the delays of the law. A whimſical application of an old ſtory produces the ſtrange effects of putting a counſellor out of countenance. The neceſſity of abſolute power in ſome governments; with a common deciſion, by which nothing is decided.*

'AS ſoon as my maſter turned to his ſhip, he
'took *me* from his purſe, once more, and
'looking earneſtly at me, for ſome moments, "We
'muſt

'must part!' (said he, with a sigh) 'we must part! 'but I hope to good purpose. *Thou* only wast the 'cause of that conduct, which now gives me fear; 'exert therefore thy influence equally, where I now 'send thee; and thou wilt excuse my fault, if it is 'one.—

'Tears, at the thought of losing me, here choaked 'his utterance. He gave me a last kiss, and sent me 'directly away, in company with a considerable number 'more, to mediate his peace.

'As the delicate nature of this transaction required 'some address, he entrusted the management of it to 'his purser, who had convinced him, by many instan-'ces, of his sagacity in the methods of obtaining an in-'fluence over the great.' *

My new master's road leading through a city, where a matter of great moment was under judicial determination, he waited for the event to gratify a natural curiosity.

The affair was this: A *fore-mast-man* in a *guard-ship*, lying in one of the neigbouring harbours, had by repeated misbehaviour in going clandestinely on shore contrary to the express orders of his captain, provoked him at length to give him *a dozen at the gang way*, in order to terrify others from following his example.

Instead of being reclaimed by this punishment, the fellow persisted to misbehave in such a manner, that the captain, who was remarkably humane in his disposition, discharged him from the ship to avoid the pain of punishing him any more.

This was just what the wretch wanted. Accordingly he went directly to a prostituted *pettifogging* attorney, who had before set him on the scheme; and employed him to sue the captain at law, for an assault, in punishing him in the harbour, where he had no power so to do.

In a country governed by laws, they must regularly take their course, in every instance however flagrant in its particular circumstances.

After all the preliminary delays of practice, which grievous as they may in some circumstances be to an individual,

* *Vol.* I.—*Page* 5. *Chap.* xi.

dividual, are yet the ſafety of the publick, the affair was now brought to a legal deciſion. You are too well acquainted with *the forms of law* to require a minute account of all which were obſerved in this caſe. But there was one incident which I cannot paſs over.

As this was a matter that importantly concerned the intereſt of the navy, the rulers of it had ordered all the captains of the *guard-ſhips*, in the harbour where it had happened, to attend the trial, in order to inform the court, in the uſages of their ſervice.

One of thoſe, who had never ſeen a court of *civil judicature* before, but was a man of natural good ſenſe, and ſome reading, having liſtened to the unintelligible pleadings, and groſs exaggerations of *the counſel* on both ſides of the queſtion, eſpecially *thoſe hired* in the proſecution, till his patience was quite exhauſted, at length aroſe, and having obtained permiſſion from the judge to ſpeak, addreſſed himſelf to the court in theſe words.

'I am ſent here by thoſe, to whom the king has 'entruſted the conduct of his navy, to explain the na- 'ture and rules of our ſervice to his court, in caſe 'I ſee any danger of their forming a wrong judgment 'of it, from inexperience in a matter ſo much out of 'their way.

'The little gentleman yonder has ſpent ſo much 'breath, and ſhewn ſuch great reading on the ſub- 'ject, that I imagine it is proper for me to make him 'ſome anſwer, which I ſhall do, in as few words as 'poſſible, being not half ſo *long winded* as he. But 'firſt I muſt beg leave to tell him a ſtory, to conform 'to rule.

'I have read in a book, (for I perceive that com- 'mon ſenſe ſignifies nothing here, if not ſupported by 'a quotation, it matters not whether to the purpoſe, 'or not!) that a certain philoſopher having declaimed 'one day for a conſiderable length of time before '*Alexander the Great*, at the head of his army, on the 'duties of a general, the Emperor turned about to '*Parmenio*, one of his generals who ſtood near him, 'and aſked him, what he thought of his ſpeech?——

'*Sire*,

'*Sire*,' (answered *Parmenio*) 'my opinion is, that *I never heard a fool talk so learnedly*.'

'I make no application. All that I say on this occasion is, that I am sure that gentleman has never 'been at sea, and consequently knows nothing of the 'service, on which he has been haranguing with such 'vehemence and eloquence. He has expatiated most 'pathetically on the injustice of inflicting corporal punishment, without a legal trial, and condemnation; 'and flourished on the danger of such an invasion of 'liberty. These to be sure are fine words; but I 'much doubt whether they are properly applied on 'this occasion. The most perfect form of government 'is allowed to be *absolute despotism*, as best calculated to work its effects without delay. In all the 'communities in this world, I doubt if there is one, 'where immediate obedience to the command of the 'governor is so indispensibly necessary to the safety 'of the whole, or where individuals are so insensible 'to every other motive to obedience but fear, as in a 'man of war.

'I have myself the honour to command a ship, in 'which I have five hundred men under me, the great'est part of whom, (I am sorry to say it) are the *outcasts* of human nature, as from some unhappy circumstances is, and perhaps must always be the uni'versal case in our service. Now as instances daily 'occur, in which a moment's delay or hesitation to 'execute my orders, though attended with the greatest 'difficulty, or most imminent danger, must evi'dently hazard the loss of the ship, and every life in 'her; I desire that gentleman to inform me how I am 'to act, should one of the men, whom I order, sup'pose, to cut away a yard that's broke in the slings, 'refuse to go aloft, and tell me I have no right to pu'nish him, till he is regularly tried and found guilty! 'Shall I admit of such an answer, to be an example to 'the rest? Or shall I punish him with such severity on 'the spot, by my own mere authority, as to terrify any 'other from imitating him? The answer to this plain 'question will determine the affair under consideration. 'If is is said that in the present case the ship's being in

'the

'the harbour, makes a difference, let us ſuppoſe her 'on fire there, and that difference will vaniſh. In a 'word, if the abſolute authority indiſpenſably neceſ- 'ſary for carrying on our ſervice in ſome inſtances is 'attempted to be abridged in any, it will of courſe be 'at length diſputed in all, and the ſervice ruined. All 'that can be done is to be cautious not to truſt it in 'improper hands.'

This method of reaſoning changed the face of the affair. The counſellor hung down his head, and ſlunk out of the court. The fears which had been entertained for public liberty vaniſhed; and the jury ſimply *found the fact*, but left the *point* of law to be determined by the judges; ſo that after all this expence and trouble, matters remained in the ſame ſtate of uncertainty as before, to the great joy of the lawyers.

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL's maſter joins a remarkable ſet of company. Their characters. CHRYSAL changes his ſervice. Account of the enterprize on which his late maſter's companions were going; with the convincing arguments they uſed to procure obedience to their commands.

(*THE purſer having on his arrival in* LONDON, *parted with* CHRYSAL *regularly in the execution of the commiſſion entruſted to him by his captain*; CHRYSAL NOW IN THE SHAPE OF A GUINEA, *after ſeveral changes of ſervice, and a variety of curious adventures, has fallen into the hands of a* PHYSICIAN *and* AUTHOR; *who, having ſhewn him many of the myſteries of the latter profeſſion, proceeds to introduce him into new ſcenes.—Vol* I. *page* 122.)

Happy in the contemplation of his own abilities, and the pleaſing proſpect they opened to him, my maſter proceeded to *figure* as uſual in his variegated ſphere. Accordingly he deſcended from his *aerial citadel*, and going out *to viſit his patients*, repaired directly to a tavern, to join a ſet of *criticks*, and *choice ſpirits*, *ſouls*

of

of ſentiment and fire, who were going that evening upon an expedition that was to immortalize their names.

This was no leſs than to aſſume the modeſt power of making laws that ſhould affect the property of a number of their fellow-ſubjects, the execution of which they were reſolved to enforce by the mild, and equitable means, which the reſpectable legiſlature of the mob always uſe to enforce obedience to their decrees.

Thoſe, who were honoured by being taken thus under their immediate command, were *the actors of plays* and *interludes*, of which, as the works of *genius*, and calculated for the entertainment of *the idle*, they claimed the ſole, and abſolute rule.

You conclude from this, that they muſt have been perſons of learning, and large fortune, whoſe affluence gave them leiſure to attend to ſubjects, which their education qualified them to judge of; but the contrary was the fact. They were either *blanks in the Creation*, whom a ſuperficial ſmattering of letters had filled with ſuch an opinion of themſelves, as to make them look with contempt upon every exertion of induſtry, as beneath their dignity, though at the ſame time they were barely able to ſubſiſt without it, by all the little ſhifts of œconomy; or tradeſmen, almoſt abſolutely illiterate, who from a prepoſterous ambition of hiding an ignorance, that was not any reproach to their ſtation, ſet up for the arbiters of taſte, on the ſtrength of a ſet of phraſes picked up at random, and of which they knew not even the meaning; and neglected the buſineſs by which they were to earn their bread, in order to make a ſhew of knowledge, that could be of no uſe to them.

When this illuſtrious ſet had ſufficiently conned their ſeveral parts, in the great enterprize which they were going to undertake, and raiſed their reſolutions to a proper pitch by wine, they prepared to adjourn to the ſcene of action, the Theatre; and calling for a *bill*, I was *changed* by my maſter to pay his *club*; and directly borrowed from the landlord by one of the leaders of the party, *who* changed me again at the door of the theatre, to pay for his admiſſion.

Theſe changes of my ſervice however did not prevent my ſeeing the proceſs of this extraordinary affair. On the

the contrary; as I now belonged to the whole theatrical community in general, I had an opportunity of getting a full inſight into the nature, and myſteries of every part of that profeſſion.

I ſee you deſire to know my ſentiments on a ſubject, that has been canvaſſed by the ingenious of all ages. Such a curioſity is natural, and ſhall be gratified at a proper time; but at preſent I muſt not interrupt the account of this tranſaction.

From the manner in which thoſe ſelf-made legiſlators had talked, when together, of every circumſtance in the management of a theatre, and profeſſion of an actor, you would have concluded that they were going to overturn the whole preſent ſyſtem of the ſtage, and inſtitute another on principles directly oppoſite, according to their own ideas of perfection.

But that was not the caſe. Among all the errors and abuſes, againſt which they declaimed with ſuch vehemence, they thought proper to attack only one, which they thought moſt intereſting to themſelves in particular. This was the right, which reaſon, and law gave the performers to fix the price of their own labours.

In the infancy of the ſtage in *London*, before it had been brought by much labour and expence, to ſuch a degree of perfection as to attract the attention of the publick, it had been the cuſtom after a certain part of the repreſentation was over, to admit perſons for leſs than was paid at the beginning.

The obvious reaſon of this was to allure company of any kind thither, and take the moſt they could get, rather than keep the houſe empty. But when the paſſion for ſeeing plays aroſe to its preſent height, this expedient appeared to be no longer neceſſary, and therefore was diſuſed; a change which thoſe who conducted the entertainments of the theatre juſtified by alledging the enhanced ſalaries of the actors, and the improvements made in the machinery, and decorations of the ſtage ſince the time when that cuſtom was introduced, which they ſaid required reimburſement, by a method, that could not juſtly be taken offence at, as *none were obliged to go, who did not approve of the terms.*

Such

Such a meaſure was moſt alarming to theſe men of taſte, ſome of whom denied themſelves the pleaſure of going to the beginning of the performance, *becauſe they were not able to pay the full price*; as the others *could not get from behind their compters before it was half ended*; and for theſe good reaſons both thought it the higheſt grievance to have a cuſtom aboliſhed, that had been ſo convenient to them.

Accordingly, as ſoon as the performance began, they all aroſe, and without any reſpect to the reſt of the audience, interrupted the players in the moſt outrageous manner, nor would deſiſt, till the managers ſhould promiſe to redreſs the grievance which affected them ſo ſeverely, and take half prices as before.

This was too flagraut a violation of juſtice to be ſubmitted to ſo ſuddenly. The managers therefore refuſed; upon which *theſe redreſſers of grievances* gave a looſe to their reſentment, at ſuch an inſtance of diſobedience to their authority; and tore the houſe to pieces, doing more damage to the proprietors, than their own entire worldly ſubſtance could repair.

CHAP. X.

The ruinous appearance of the ſcene of action ſupplies matter for mirth to thoſe whoſe trade it is to laugh at every thing. The point carried againſt law and reaſon. Enquiry into the cauſe of this. The riſe of the prejudice againſt the profeſſion of an actor.

WHEN theſe men of genius and public ſpirit had thus gallantly accompliſhed their enterprize, they marched off in triumph, denouncing a repetition of their reſentment, ſhould their orders not be obeyed.

The appearance of the houſe, after this ravage; and the looks of the actors when they ventured to creep out of their hiding-holes, ſeemed to realize the mimic ſcenes uſually

uſually exhibited them. All was havock, deſolation, amazement, and affright. Crowns, ſceptres, candleſticks, and broken benches were jumbled together: Sovereigns, and ſweepers, lords, link-boys, dutcheſſes, and cinder-wenches joined in one common lamentation of their fate.

This, however, laſted not long. Their hearts were not formed of ſtuff, for grief to make a deep impreſſion on: Nor were they ſo unaccuſtomed to the rubs of life as to be dejected at any miſchance. Their concern therefore wore off with their fright; and one of them, reſuming his character of turning every thing to ridicule, marched with ſolemn pace and rueful countenance up to the motley ruins now collected into a heap, and with ſome droll variations, apt to the occaſion, *ſpouted* over them a tragick ſpeech, in all the emphaſis and trick of woe. The humour inſtantly ran through them all. Mirth grinned on every face; and they vied in cracking villainous jeſts on each other's *undoing*.

But the managers had ſuffered too ſeverely in their property to be in ſo merry a mood. They conſulted among themſelves, and *with the ſages of the law*, what was proper for them to do, to obtain redreſs for ſuch injuſtice, and prevent the menaced repetition of it. But all was to no purpoſe. Law gave way to licentiouſneſs; and they were obliged to ſubmit to the moſt intolerable of all tyrannies, *that of the mob*.

You are ſurprized that ſuch things ſhould be, in a country governed by equal, and eſtabliſhed laws. In ſpeculation it muſt ſeem ſtrange; but the leaſt acquaintance with life would reconcile you to inconſiſtencies ſtill groſſer. There is ſomething however in the circumſtances of this caſe, which deſerves attention, and makes it not improper to trace to their origin the prejudices from which ſuch injuſtice could proceed.

When the ſyſtem of Divine worſhip, which is now profeſſed in theſe parts of the world, was firſt propoſed to mankind, the human mind was a ſlave to ſuperſtitions, which were a diſgrace to that portion of reaſon given for its direction.

By a perverſion, of which man alone is capable, the celebration of thoſe ſuperſtitions, though profeſſedly deſigned

ſigned in honour of the Deity, was attended with *games* and *ſcenical interludes*, in which the groſſeſt immoralities received the ſanction of religion, and were practiſed openly as pleaſing to him. This was done to attach the paſſions of the multitude; and ſatisfy their curioſity with ſenſible repreſentations, in order to prevent their making rational enquiries into the grounds of thoſe ſuperſtitions, the principles of which were ſubſervient to the policy of the ruling powers.

A religion inſtituted on purpoſe to reclaim man from immoralities and ſuperſtitions, and reſtore him to the dignity of his nature, neceſſarily ſtruck at every thing that conduced to their ſupport: Accordingly the perſons appointed to propagate it, exerted all their endeavours againſt thoſe games and interludes, both as a part of the ſuperſtitious worſhip which they wanted to abolish, and as in themſelves ſubverſive of moral virtue, by the vices which they exhibited to imitation, heightened and made ſtill more alluring by every incentive art and pomp of expence.

For this purpoſe, reaſon, as well as Religion, ſupplied ready and powerful arguments; but not content to wait for the ſlow effect of theſe, they ſtrove to prejudice thoſe whom they could not perſuade; and to obviate the imitation of their example, raiſed an abhorrence to the perſons of all concerned in ſuch repreſentations, caſting them off from the rites of religion, and declaring them unworthy both of the protection of the laws, and the common privileges of ſociety: A method that in one reſpect defeated its own deſign; as it could never reclaim the offenders, however it might deter others from following their example.

Nor did they ſtop here. By an error too common in the heat of argumentation, they concluded *from the abuſe, againſt the uſe* of the ſtage, and branded with the mark of reprobation all future actors for the faults of the preſent.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

Continued. The common conſequences of exceſs of zeal. The profeſſed intent of the theatrical repreſentations defeated by this abſurd prejudice againſt actors. The vices againſt which this prejudice is levelled, in reality the effects of it; with the means of remedying this and other abuſes.

HOWEVER the occaſion might there ſeem to juſtify this exceſs of zeal, when the cauſe ceaſed, the effect ſhould in reaſon have ceaſed alſo; and theſe general cenſures have been repealed. The ſuperſtitions which were the foundation of the firſt charge againſt the ſtage have been long aboliſhed; nor are the abſurdities and immoralities which gave offence to reaſon and virtue any longer practiſed here. On the contrary, the profeſſed intent of theatrical repreſentations at preſent is to inſinuate inſtruction under the pleaſing appearance of entertainment, to encourage virtue by example, and inculcate the practice of it, by ſhewing the evils inſeparably attendant on vice to regulate the paſſions by diſplaying the danger of indulging them too far, and to put folly out of countenance by holding it up to ridicule.

Now as experience has proved the ſtage capable of anſwering theſe great ends, what can be more injudicious than to attempt to bring it into diſrepute? What more unjuſt than to conſign to infamy thoſe, who exert the fineſt powers of the human mind and body, to accompliſh this end in the moſt pleaſing manner? Yet ſuch is the abſurdity of man, that while perſons of the moſt exalted rank, and ſacred character not only frequent the theatre, but alſo compoſe works to be repreſented on it, and evidently value themſelves more on poſſeſſing the abilities requiſite to compoſe them, that on all their other diſtinctions in life, thoſe from whoſe action ſuch compoſitions receive their force and beauty,

are

are held in diſrepute, and ſubject to the ſevereſt diſadvantages only for acting them. If it is no diſgrace *to write a play*, why ſhould it be any *to act it?*

It is true, the conſequences of this prejudice are not ſo ſevere here as in other countries, but ſtill they are ſuch as reaſon is aſhamed of. If actors are not literally excluded from the protection of the laws, they want ſupport to avail themſelves of that protection, as in the caſe, which gave riſe to theſe reflections! if they are not *actually (for literally they are)* excluded from the rites of religion, they want encouragement to participate in them!

I ſee you are ready to object to the utility of the ſtage, the faults in many of the performances exhibited upon it; and to juſtify the diſrepute affixed to the character of an actor, from the general immorality of their conduct in private life, as if it aroſe ſolely upon their profeſſion. But a moment's reflection would ſuggeſt anſwers to both theſe objections.

If there is any improper exhibition upon the ſtage, ſurely the blame ſhould fall on thoſe, who have a legal power to prevent ſuch abuſe of the inſtitution of it! If the actors are immoral in their lives, ſhould it not be conſidered that they are prejudged from their profeſſion; and deprived of one of the ſtrongeſt inducements to virtue, that is *reputation*, before they are proved to be guilty of vice?

The conſequence of this is, that too few enter into the profeſſion, till after they have loſt their reputation, or are driven by mere neceſſity; by which means they reflect that diſgrace upon it, which they are thought to ſuffer from it; and as they are ſenſible that they are precluded by this prejudice from all poſſibility of recovering or preſerving it by the moſt careful deportment, they become deſperate, and proceed till they even loſe the ſenſe of unavailing ſhame.

Whereas, if a different conduct was obſerved to them! if the brand of reprobation was taken off, and the profeſſion eſtabliſhed in that credit, which the abilities indiſpenſibly neceſſary to eminence in it deſerve; Genius would be no longer damp'd by apprehenſion,

exhibition, can be ſuppoſed to want judgment to know whether it has that merit, you may naturally think that there could not be much difficulty in the intercourſe between them; but human actions are not always to be judged of from the ſtrongeſt appearances of reaſon.

The repreſentation of a new piece neceſſarily puts the manager to ſome expence, and much trouble. If you add to this the natural anxiety about ſucceſs *for merit is often rejected by caprice, or perſonal prejudice*, you would not wonder that he ſhould be cautious what he brings upon the ſtage; and prefer acting old ones, unattended with theſe inconveniencies, while the publick will bear the repetition, and does not peremptorily demand new.

This is the real reaſon, why ſo few new pieces are performed; and not any decline of poetical genius to produce them; it being certain that there are as many good plays written now, as at any former point of time. But the matter is this. All the good ones of thoſe times lie together before you, and raiſe your opinion to the happy days which produced them: But if you conſider the long intervals between, and the innumerable bad ones which appeared along with them, but are now loſt in the wreck of time, you will find that you have not ſo great reaſon to complain of the preſent decline of genius, as you may have imagined.

I do not by this mean, that every one who pretends to write is poſſeſſed of that genius; or that all the pieces offered to the ſtage are proper for repreſentation. On the contrary, many who want every qualification indiſpenſably to ſucceſs in ſuch attempts, make them every day in defiance of reaſon; and ſtrive to obtrude upon the publick works which are a reproach to common ſenſe.

The motives of this are obvious. Whenever a man is at a loſs how to ſpend his time; or wants to raiſe a little money, down he ſits without more ado, and writes a play: The conſequence of this is, that the very reaſons which made him turn poet, neceſſarily preclude him from ſucceſs. *Idleneſs* prevents that care, that *limæ labor*, which alone can make a performance proper for publick repreſentation; and *diſtreſs* depreſſes the imagination;

and

and hinders it rising to that *happy boldness*, which is the essence of poetry.

It appears from hence, that if the managers of theatres from interested motives are often to blame for rejecting *good* pieces; poets (or those who should be thought such) are much oftner culpable for offering them *bad* ones. The difference of opinion unavoidable on this account occasions the difficulty in their intercourse. But in this the contest is not equal. The word of the manager is decisive; while the poet has nothing left, but to vent his resentment in unavailing (and often unjust) complaints, and abuse, in which those who have least right are always loudest; for enamoured with the beauty of their own offspring, like the Ape in the fable, they throw dirt at all, who presume to find fault with it.

But severe as it must be to suffer this, it is not the greatest difficulty the manager has to encounter with them. Not satisfied with the civil refusal of affected delays and excuses, they must have a direct answer, which they controvert with all their power, and oblige him to support by such arguments as must give him pain, if he has either politeness or good-nature; though after all, instead of convincing them, he only gets their's and their friends ill will, and arms all their tongues against him.

It is not to be doubted but the *evasions* which managers use to *shift off good* pieces are as grossly offensive to moral propriety, truth and candour, as the arguments of authors in defence of *bad* ones can possibly be to reason; but as I did not happen to be a witness to any instances of them, I shall confine my account to the latter.

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL's maſter ſits in judgment on ſome pieces offered to him. A poet of faſhion enters. The arguments by which he ſupports his work againſt the objections of CHRYSAL's *maſter, who makes ſome curious dramatical ſtrictures. The poet, driven from his laſt retreat, the intereſt of his great friends, by the common cant of the houſe's being* FULL *for the ſeaſon, departs in a rage, denouncing their reſentment, which* CRYSAL's *maſter ſhews his reaſon not to fear the effects of.*

THE important morning after I came into the poſſeſſion of the manager was big with the fate of many a poetical performance, the authors of which were appointed to come there for his deciſive anſwer.

Accordingly, as ſoon as he had breakfaſted, he repaired to his tribunal, where he had been waited for ſome time by one of thoſe aſpiring genius's, who ſacrifice the ſolid happineſs of independance, to the vain ambition *of being well with the great:* ſubmitting to their capricious humours for the honour of a nod in publick places, or an invitation to their tables; to enhance their welcome at which, and conſume time they know not how to make better uſe of, they fall upon this wiſe expedient of turning poets.

When they had gone through all the formalities of polite addreſs, and taken their ſeat with proper ceremony, the poet opened the buſineſs. 'Well, Sir,' (ſaid he with a ſmile of ſelf-complaiſance) 'You have 'peruſed that trifle! what is your opinion? Heh! don't 'you think it will do?'

'Sir,' (anſwered my maſter, with the ſmooth ſimper of a courtier) 'you do it injuſtice by calling it a 'trifle! the piece has a great deal of merit; and reads 'very prettily in many places; but I fear it is not quite 'ſo proper for the ſtage!'——

'How, Sir! not proper for the ſtage! pray, Sir 'where

'where does the impropriety lie? Several perſons of 'the firſt rank have read it, and found no ſuch thing. 'His Grace ſaid it abounded with the *vis comica*; Lord 'Taſtely was charmed with the *Attic ſalt*; and Sir 'Courtley admired the elegance of the diction. Pray, 'Sir, where then can the impropriety lie? They are 'allowed to be judges.'——

—'Pardon me, Sir, I do not preſume to call their 'judgment in queſtion, in the leaſt. But—a—'

——'And why then ſhould you heſitate to receive 'it? they will ſupport it, with all their intereſt."—

'That, Sir, I do not doubt. But—ſtill, Sir,—the 'town'——

——'The town, Sir! and pray what of the town? 'Is the judgment of the town to be put in competition 'with theirs?'

—'No, Sir! by no means! but ſtill the town is a 'very formidable, and arbitrary judge; and will not 'admit its authority to be diſputed, in ſuch matters as 'this.'——

——'And pray, good Sir, what objections can the 'judicious town, or you, its learned advocate, 'make?'——

—'Sir, you impoſe a very diſagreeable taſk upon me! 'I had much rather be excuſed.'——

—'I do not in the leaſt doubt that, Sir; but my 'friends inſiſt upon a direct anſwer. Either receive 'the play, or ſay why you will not.'——

—'Sir, I ſhould be very ſorry to give offence to any 'gentleman; but ſince you inſiſt upon my opinion, Do 'not you think, Sir, the plot is too—too—too domeſ-'tic? Are not the intrigue and tricks of ſervants too 'low a ſubject for polite entertainment?'——

—'How, Sir! have you an objection to ſervants? 'Do not they make a principal part in all our modern 'comedies? Are the *Jeremy's*, and *Scrubs*, and *Phillis's*, 'and a thouſand others, to be rejected becauſe they 'are ſervants?'——

—'No, Sir! but conſider they are not the principal 'characters; nor does the plot turn upon them. 'They come in as it were, by accident; and indeed, 'except in the inſtances you have mentioned, and

'perhaps a very few more, they had much better be 'left out. It ſhews a groſſneſs of taſte to ſtoop to them 'for entertainment.'——

—'And do not I introduce the maſters, and miſtreſſes 'too, as well as the ſervants? Are there not country-'ſquires, and town ſops, and fine ladies?'——

—'Yes, Sir, you do introduce them, but in a ſubordi-'nate light; and merely to be the dupes of their ſer-'vants, without any buſineſs, or importance of their 'own.'——

—'And pray, Sir, in what other light, do moſt 'maſters appear? Hah! hah! hah!—Well then it 'ſeems all your objections are to the fable. You have 'nothing to ſay againſt the ſentiments, and dic-'tion.'——

—'The Sentiments, Sir, may be very proper; and 'the diction ſuited to them; but you muſt be ſenſible 'that the former objection affects them all equally. 'The characters are too low; and the ſentiments and 'diction conſequently too coarſe.'——

—'Sir,—Sir,—Sir, I ſhall not enter into any farther 'arguments with you. *His Grace* bids me tell you he 'inſiſts upon your receiving it; or giving him ſuch 'reaſons as he ſhall think ſatisfactory, which muſt be 'very different from thoſe inſignificant cavils.'——

—'His Grace need not exert his authority to in-'fluence my obedience. The leaſt hint of his pleaſure 'were ſufficient; but unluckily I am engaged for the 'whole ſeaſon; quite *full*'——

—'*Full!* why did you not tell me ſo at firſt?"

—'Becauſe you inſiſted in having my opinion.'—

—'Very well, Sir! I ſhall let his Grace and all my 'friends know how you behaved. Let me have 'the play! impertinent, inſolent, ignorant puppy!' (muttered he, as he went out.)

'So' (ſaid my maſter, as ſoon as he was gone) 'I have now made him my enemy for ever. As for his '*noble friends*, they are above troubling themſelves a-'bout any thing of the kind; and give him leave to men-'tion their names, only to get rid of his importunity."

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

Continuation. CHRYSAL*'s maſter rejects the work of a poet for his ignorance of the laws of the drama. More dramatical ſtrictures. The poet modeſtly inſiſts that his play is refuſed only becauſe it wants the intereſt of the great; and goes off in an huff. Another poet repulſed for his attachment to the laws of the drama. Arguments againſt theſe laws. The poet refuſes to conform to the preſent taſte; and makes an appeal. One more poet refuſed only for wanting every poetical talent. Remarks on ſomething that affect more than care to own it.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, on an occaſion not common.*

THE laſt poet was ſcarce down ſtairs, when a footman *announced* the entrance of another.

My maſter did not think it neceſſary to obſerve ſo much ceremony with him, as he had done with the former, but told him directly that he could not receive his pieces.

Such a ſentence ſtruck the poet *all of an heap*. He was unable to ſpeak for ſome moments; but recovering himſelf at length. 'Not receive it, Sir!' (ſaid he) 'you ſurprize me. Pray, Sir, why ſo?'——

'I am very loath to find fault, Sir!' (anſwered my maſter) 'But you ſeem to be utterly unacquainted with 'all *the laws of the drama*.'

—'The laws of the drama! they are but art; I 'write from nature. Theſe laws have been long laid 'aſide. *Shakeſpear* wrote without laws.'——

—'So much the worſe. But he is a dangerous ex'ample to imitate. The local, temporary laws of the 'antient drama are laid aſide, it is true; but not the 'immutable, general laws of propriety, and reaſon. 'Your fable is inconnected, improbable, and unaffect'ing.'

'How, Sir! unaffecting! Can the fall of a 'mighty empire be ſaid to be unaffecting?'——

——'No, Sir, But the deſcription of it moſt certainly may, if not drawn with judgment, and force. 'And then your characters are ill ſupported; and your 'ſentiments and language loſt in the clouds.'—

—'What, Sir, can the ſentiments of kings and 'Princes be too ſublime?'

—'There is a wide difference between being ſublime, and ſwollen out of nature.'

—'But what objection can you make to the language, is it not raiſed with *Epithets*, and *Metaphors*, 'and all the figures of poetry?'—

—'Good Sir, poetical figures in poor language 'look like embroidery on a blanket. They only make 'its poverty ridiculous. Beſide your *ſtalking in their ſtilts*, betrays you into many a ſtumble in the dirt. 'Your figures frequently fly in the face of common 'ſenſe, and break through every rule of grammar.'—

——'Well, Sir, I ſhall conſider of theſe particulars. The great objection I have heard made to modern plays, is their want of buſineſs: But this can 'never be charged to mine. There is a *ghoſt*, and a 'battle; and a king dethron'd. Buſineſs enough and 'enough, I am ſure?'——

—'Ghoſts and battles, Sir, it is true, are ſometimes 'introduced with ſucceſs; but then it muſt be by a 'maſter in the art, elſe they have a very contrary effect."

—'I apprehend that the aim of tragedy is to work 'upon the paſſions. In this I believe you cannot ſay 'I have fail'd. The diſtreſs is truly great.'——

—'Diſtreſs when out of character loſes the appearance of reality, and becomes ridiculous. A king in 'an alms-houſe, and a queen begging from door to 'door, are images which ſink into burleſque.'—

—'It is very well, Sir! you may ſay what you 'pleaſe, but I am ſatisfied it is not want of merit in 'my play that makes you refuſe it. You daily act much 'worſe. If it had been recommended to you by ſome 'lord, you would have found none of theſe faults; but 'merit may ſtarve without intereſt to ſupport it now a 'days. This is fine encouragement to genius truly, 'and the publick is like to be well entertained while

'ſuch

'ſuch men have it in their power to refuſe every thing
'that does not happen to pleaſe themſelves.'——

Saying this he ſnatched up his play, leaving my maſter to pleaſe himſelf with the proſpect of being *criticized upon in a new paper*, and pulled to pieces in a ſcurrilous pamphlet.

He had not time to indulge theſe reflections long, when another of his clients attended his levee.

As ſoon as he was ſeated, 'I have read over your 'work with great care;' (ſaid my maſter) 'and am 'ſorry to ſay, I think it improper for the ſtage.'—

'— Pray, Sir, why ſo?' (anſwered the poet, with an air of importance) 'It is written ſtrictly according to 'the rules of drama; and enriched with the ſublimeſt 'ſentiments of the antients.'—

—'Sir, I am ſenſible of its merit; as well as of the 'great learning of the author: but the taſte of the 'times requires entertainment of a different kind.'—

—'Surely compliance with a vitiated taſte will not 'juſtify the breach of rules, taken originally from na-'ture, and eſtabliſhed for ſo many ages.'—

—'I neither diſpute the original juſtice, nor the an-'tiquity of them: But I apprehend that the latter in a 'great meaſure deſtroys the preſent force of the form-'er. The cuſtoms of mankind, the part of nature that 'comes within the province of the drama, are ſo 'changed ſince the eſtabliſhment of thoſe rules, that 'it would be moſt abſurd to exact obedience to them 'now. Beſide, may it not be ſaid, without violation of 'the reſpect due to antiquity, that experience in a great 'length of time may have made many improvements 'in thoſe rules. The infancy of every art is weak.'—

—'But whatever change may have happened in the 'cuſtoms of the world, truth ſtill remains the ſame, 'and the genuine ſentiments of nature cannot diſ-'pleaſe'—

—'Very true! but ſtill they may not always be re-'ceived with equal pleaſure, in the ſame garb. Un-'impaſſioned ſentiment, however juſt and ſublime, 'works not the effects deſigned by the drama, whoſe 'aim is to convey inſtruction and pleaſure at the ſame 'time, by an immediate addreſs to the paſſions.'—

—' Is it poſſible, that you can be an advocate for ' the irregular monſters, which at preſent diſhonour ' the ſtage?'

—' As for irregularity, I look upon it to be but an ' imaginary defect. Though even if it were otherwiſe, ' I am the ſervant of the public, and obliged to find ' entertainment for their taſte, be it what it will. If ' you would but conform'—

—' No, Sir! that I never will, againſt reaſon and ' the antients. I ſee you are prejudiced, and therefore ' ſhall not argue with you any longer. But I ſhall not ' acquieſce in ſilence. I will publiſh the performance, ' without being diſcouraged by your refuſal, and ap- ' peal to the judgment of the learned.'———

He then marched off with a ſtately pace, and my maſter looking after him, ' There again' (ſaid he, ſhrugging his ſhoulders) ' I ſhall now have the ghoſts of ' *Sophocles*, and *Ariſtotle*, and all the doughty antients, ' raiſed to haunt me.'——

As he ſaid this, a perſon entered whoſe whole appearance ſpoke diſtreſs. He approached my maſter bowing lowly, and trembling with anxiety as he ſpoke: ' I have made bold to wait upon you, Sir!' (ſaid he) ' but if you are not at leiſure, will call another ' time.'——

' Pray, Sir, ſit down;' (replied my maſter, with a ſmile of encouragement) ' I have looked over your ' work and am concerned that it is not in my power ' to receive it; as I ſhould be ſincerely glad to ſerve ' you. But in this, it is impoſſible. I muſt be plain ' with you.—You ſeem to want every poetical ta- ' lent.'—

' I thought, Sir,' (returned the poet, ſcarce able to collect ſpirit enough to ſpeak to him) ' that the buſi- ' neſs of tragedy was to work upon the paſſions! I de- ' pended entirely on the diſtreſs.'

—' Very true, Sir! But there are other paſſions, ' beſides pity to be applied to; nor is poverty a proper ' diſtreſs to work upon them. Severe as it is to be felt, ' it affects but little in repreſentation. The upper ' ranks of life know not what it is; and thoſe who do ' are deſirous to keep the thought at a diſtance; and

' conceal

'conceal a knowledge they are aſhamed of. The mind 'muſt be properly prepared to feel for another. The 'deſcription of a famine would affect but little after a 'feaſt.'

This came too home to the unhappy poet. He burſt into tears; and was departing without being able to make any reply. My maſter felt his diſtreſs; tho' he could not receive his play, as he knew that an audience would pay no regard to his circumſtances, nor give up an evening's entertainment to relieve an author's indigence; and waiting on him to the door, ſlipped a couple of guineas into his hand; when it fell to my lot to change my ſervice.

I had never experienced my own influence on the human heart ſo ſtrongly, as on this occaſion. The poet kiſſed the hand of his benefactor in a rapture too big for utterance; and forgetting for a moment all his diſtreſſes, went to a coffee-houſe and *changed* me to pay for his breakfaſt; 'where I was immediately *borrowed* 'at the bar, by an officer, who was going to dine with 'his general, and wanted money to give his ſervants.'

Vol. I. —— *Page* 122.

CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAL's maſter engages in a genteel amour. A delicate way of refining pleaſure. His miſtreſs perſuades him that ſhe has poiſoned him, and herſelf. His ſituation on hearing this. Striking proofs of medical ſkill, with the advantage of a regular courſe of practice. An exemplary inſtance of charity and forgiveneſs diverts the doctor's attention to the murderers.

(CHRYSAL, *after having ſeen ſeveral ſtriking ſcenes, in the courſe of an extenſive circulation, is at length carried to an horſe-race, where he is initiated in ſome of the myſteries of the turf.*)

'It was on a ſporting bet, on one of the bye matches, that I was *loſt* that evening to the nobleman, as I

'said, in whoſe poſſeſſion I happened to remain till the 'end of the meeting.' *Vol.* II.—*Page* 96.

As it was late in the evening when my maſter arrived in *London*, he reſolved to indulge himſelf for that night in the embraces of a tender hearted female, whom he *picked up* in the ſtreet, (for he was no way nice in his amours) as he walked from the inn, where he alighted, to his own houſe, in order to ſtretch his legs.

Nothing more than common occurrences paſſed upon this occaſion. When his lordſhip had made his miſtreſs *nobly* drunk, *by the way of refining his pleaſure*, the delicate pair went lovingly to bed together, where awaking about midnight, he was ſurprized to find her cold, and lifeleſs in his arms. After ſome fruitleſs efforts to move her, he ſtarted out of bed in a fright, and called up all his ſervants; who perceiving that ſhe was not actually dead, took ſome pains to recover her, that ſhe at length opened her eyes, and ſtaring wildly around her for ſome moments, 'Where am I?' (ſaid ſhe) 'Are 'theſe the regions of the damn'd? For thither only 'can ſuch ſelf murdering wretches, as I am, go.'—— Then ſeeing his lordſhip, whoſe curioſity had brought him to the bed-ſide, 'and you are dead too?' (continued ſhe, wringing her hands and weeping moſt paſſionately) 'O why did I not confine my rage to 'myſelf? Why did I add your murder to my 'own, to plunge my ſoul ſtill deeper in perdi-'tion?'——

This ſurprized all preſent. The ſervants who were indifferent whether it was true or falſe, imagined ſhe only raved, and doubled their efforts to bring her to herſelf, ſoothing her with expreſſions of tenderneſs, and telling her ſhe was not dead, but would ſoon be very well: But my maſter was too nearly concerned to think ſo coolly of the matter.

'What is that you ſay?' (ſaid he trembling in horror) 'What is it you ſay about murder? There is no 'one murdered here'

'How!' (anſwered ſhe, fixing her eyes eagerly upon him) 'Is it poſſible, that I am ſtill alive? And 'that you alſo live? It cannot be! the poiſon which 'I ſwallowed this night, and in which you ſhared too 'largely,

'largely, cannot have miſſed of its effect. But ſoft: 'its operation now begins! that pang!—oh!—that 'pang beſpeaks the near approach of death!——O 'mercy!—O cry for mercy on your ſins!'—

'What poiſon!' (interrupted he, terrified almoſt to diſtraction) 'What poiſon have I ſhared in? Speak! 'tell me directly, or'———

'Spare your threats, my lord,' (ſaid ſhe with a compoſure in her looks and manner that perſuaded every one preſent ſhe was in her ſenſes) 'ſpare your 'threats to a wretch, whom death will ſoon deliver 'from your power; and forgive a crime, that pro- 'ceeded from deſpair. Wearied of the miſeries of 'this life, I this night reſolved to put an end to it, 'and for that purpoſe, though on another pretence, 'procured a doſe of poiſon from a Chymiſt's appren 'tice, who on giving it to me, ſaid it was ſufficient to 'kill twenty of the ſtrongeſt men alive: And this 'poiſon did I take an opportunity to put into the laſt 'bottle of wine, when you went out of the room, 'determined to ſacrifice one man to my revenge for 'the injuries I had received from the ſex: Though af- 'ter I had done it, my heart relented; but you inſiſt- 'ed on my drinking, and fear of your reſentment pre- 'vented me from making a diſcovery, that would have 'ſaved us both from this unhappy'——At theſe words ſhe fell into convulſions ſo ſtrong that every one, who ſaw her, thought ſhe was really in the agonies of death.

The ſituation of my maſter, at this ſight, may be eaſily conceived. He inſtantly felt every pain, that poiſon could produce; and falling on the floor, roared aloud in anguiſh of mind and body, lamenting his untimely fate, and confeſſing all the ſins of his life, to the ſervants who ſtood around him.

As ſoon as they had raiſed him up and carried him into another room, a dawn of hope aroſe at his finding he did not immediately die. 'What!' (exclaimed he) 'is every one combined againſt me? Am I to periſh 'for want of aſſiſtance? Will no body even call me a 'phyſician? Perhaps I might yet be ſaved, were pro-

per-

'per means applied! will no body call me a phy-'sician?'———

On his saying this, every one was running to obey him, the sight of which threw him into new distress. 'O wretch that I am!' (exclaimed he) 'and so I 'am to be left alone! to perish for want even of a 'drop of water! is it not enough for some of you to 'go; and not all to desert me in this base, this barba-'rous manner?'———This seemed to restore them to their senses; and accordingly while some went to call the doctors, the rest staid to take care of him.

Where the carrion is, the crows will soon be gathered together. He was immediately surrounded by half the meagre faces of the faculty, (for as he had not named any one in particular, his servants to shew their care had summoned all they knew of); who taking the account he gave them of his being poisoned for truth, proceeded instantly to practise upon him every method they had ever heard of being used in such a case, in hopes that some one of them might take effect. He was cup'd, bled, and blistered; vomited, clystered, and purged in the space of two hours; the doctors sagaciously discovering new symptoms of the poison, every new remedy they tried.

When they found that beyond their expectations he had strength enough to out-live all this, they put him into bed, and covering him up warm, to take a sweat, comforted him with hopes of his recovery, in consequence of their skill and care.

While they waited *patiently* for this important crisis, some of them happened to think of the poor murderess, who had been neglected all this time, and now lay in a swoon, the convulsions having gone off, as her strength fail'd.

On hearing her name mentioned, his lordship to shew his Christian charity, and prove the sincerity of the repentance and amendment, which he vowed in case his life should be mercifully spared, desired that they would do something for the unhappy creature, if she was still alive. This was sufficient to attach their compassion and care. They answered with one voice, that

that it was a pity to let her periſh, without even attempting to ſave her, and, praiſing his lordſhip's goodneſs, prepared to try ſome experiments upon her alſo, if only to do ſomething for their fee.

CHAP. XVI.

The recovery of the murderess opens a new ſcene. She clears up the myſtery, leſs to the ſatisfaction of the doctors, than of their noble patient, who rewards her liberally for her good news; and ſends them off without their errand. Reflections on ſome genteel matters. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

THEIR practice upon this new ſubject however was cut ſhort by a ſucceſs, more ſpeedy than they deſired; their firſt operation of bleeding bringing her directly to herſelf.

As ſoon as ſhe perceived what had been done, and recovered ſtrength to ſpeak, 'Good God,' (ſaid ſhe) 'what is the meaning of this? Who can have been ſo 'inhuman as to bleed me, when it is known to be ruin, 'in my diſorder?'

'In your diſorder!' (ſaid one of the doctors with a contemptuous frown) 'what diſorder? Have you not 'poiſoned yourſelf? and what is ſtill worſe, his lord-'ſhip alſo; who now lies in the ſame deſperate con-'dition with you, and has from his unmerited good-'neſs directed us to take this care of you; though if we 'can ſave you from this death, it muſt be to ſuffer one 'more ignominious.'

'I poiſon myſelf!' (interrupted ſhe, raiſing herſelf up in the bed) 'I poiſon his lordſhip! What can you 'mean by this? I underſtand you not; and am inno-'cent, even in thought, of any ſuch crimes. Explain 'yourſelf therefore; and do not ſport with the miſery 'of a wretched creature, who has more real diſtreſſes 'than ſhe is able to bear, without the addition of ima-'ginary guilt.'

This

This amazed them all. They ſtood looking at each other for ſome moments, wrapt in reflections, not the moſt pleaſing, on the conſequences which might attend their precipitation in treating his lordſhip in the manner they had done, in caſe what ſhe ſaid ſhould prove true. At length on her repeating her intreaties, one of them condeſcended to inform her of every thing that had paſſed, dwelling particularly on the deſperate condition his lordſhip had been in, and the various methods they had uſed to relieve him.

Weak and diſpirited as you may ſuppoſe her to have been, ſhe was ſcarce able to refrain from laughing at this account. 'A deſperate condition he muſt be in now 'indeed; (ſaid ſhe) 'whatever he was before! but 'if you will give me leave to ſlip on my gown and go 'to him, I'll ſoon compleat his cure.'

This was a ſtep ſo contrary to all rules of practice, that they could not permit it. On the contrary, one of them obſerving the impropriety of liſtening to the ravings of a perſon, whoſe head muſt certainly be diſtracted by the effects of the poiſon, they all took the hint, and were actually going to hold her down by force, in order to proceed in their experiments upon her, which you may think would not have been the more merciful for what ſhe had juſt ſaid.

But ſhe was delivered from this diſcipline, by the appearance of his lordſhip, who on one of his ſervants carrying him the pleaſing news of what ſhe ſaid, had found ſtrength enough to run to her, and throwing himſelf on the bed, 'O my deareſt girl!' (exclaimed he claſping his arm around her neck) 'am I not then a 'dead man? Tell me! tell me truth, directly! am I 'not a dead man?'—

His haggard looks, and the bandages and flannels, in which he was wrapped all over, convinced her of the truth of what the doctors had told her he had ſuffered. Shocked at the thought, ſhe held up her hands in a ſupplicating poſture, and imploring his pardon for what ſhe had been the involuntary cauſe of, informed him that ſhe was ſubject to fits, which attacked her with double violence whenever ſhe drank to any exceſs, as his lordſhip had compelled her to do that night, much

he

he muſt have been ſenſible, againſt her inclination, had ſhe dared to refuſe him; and that when ſhe was in thoſe fits, which laſted till the effects of the liquor went off, ſhe was apt to rave, and ſpeak every extravagance and inconſiſtency that could come in a diſordered head.

The manner in which ſhe ſpoke left not the leaſt room for doubt All his fears were inſtantly removed, his joy at which obliterated the remembrance of every thing he had ſuffered in mind and body, and he not only forgave her, but alſo made her a handſome preſent in recompence for her happy news.

But his doctors met with a very different treatment. He reviled them in the ſevereſt terms, for their ignorance and preſumption in putting him to ſuch torture, and tearing his conſtitution by ſuch violent means, before they were certain of his ailment; and without permitting them to alledge in their vindication his aſſertions of what he felt, and intreaties not to leave any thing unattempted, that they thought might poſſibly relieve him, ordered them to be turned out of doors, without giving them a farthing for all their trouble.

I have ſeen that you were ſurprized at his lordſhip's indelicacy, and diſregard to his health, in having an amour with a creature in ſo low a ſtate of infamy and wretchedneſs, as to walk the ſtreets to offer herſelf to caſual proſtitution; as well as at her expreſſing herſelf in a manner ſo much above her appearance, and circumſtances. But the leaſt acquaintance with the world would eaſily account for both.

When once a woman falls from chaſtity, the characteriſtick virtue of her ſex, the deſcent to this loweſt degree of human miſery is natural, and ſeldom, very ſeldom, fails to come of courſe. The kept-miſtreſs, who this day ſhines in brocade and jewels, and rattles about in her chariot, will in a few months ſpend the night in the ſtreets, for want of an habitation to hide her head, and without cloaths to ſhelter her from the inclemencies of the weather, when the novelty that firſt recommended her is worn off; *for no proſperity that is not eſtabliſhed on virtue can laſt.* Theirs indeed is of all the moſt fleeting; the vice which is their ſupport affecting

fecting their own conduct by example, and making them laviſh profuſely, what they get from profuſion.

Such had been the caſe of this female. She had been entitled by birth and education to better hopes; but vice had blaſted all, and left her only the reflection of what ſhe might have been, to aggravate her preſent wretchedneſs.

As to him! his health poſſibly was in a ſtate not worthy of regard! and for his delicacy! the indiſcriminate vague intercourſe of the ſexes effectually deſtroys that, as well as the ſentimental attachment, which refines the deſire of rational beings, and diſtinguiſhes it from the groſs appetite of brute animals, ſo that in general nothing farther than the gratification of that appetite is now ſought; and as that can be effected by any one object, as well as another, whether it is found in a palace or a brothel makes no difference, with thoſe who profeſs themſelves men of pleaſure. The ſex is all they ſeek, without regard to any qualifications; and conſequently, when their appetites are gratified, they deſert the objects of them with the ſame indifference as they took them.

But to return to my maſter. It was ſome time as you may imagine, before he recovered the effects of this affair; but I remained not with him ſo long. The doctors, in revenge for the treatment they had met with, blazed it abroad, with the addition of every ridiculous circumſtance they could invent. This brought all his acquaintances to have a laugh at him upon the occaſion; to one of whom he *loſt* me that afternoon on a bet, at a race, between two of the *maggots*, which they found in the nuts they cracked after dinner.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL's master goes to be admitted into an extraordinary society. Some reflections not suited to the taste of the times. Rise of this society. A description of a monastery, with an account of its members, and of some of its rules.

THE next morning after I came into the possession of my new master, he set out upon a party of pleasure of a most extraordinary nature. This was to be admitted into a society, formed of a number of persons of the first distinction, in burlesque imitation of the religious societies, which are instituted in other countries.

I have already told you, that I shall not give any opinion in religious matters. But whether the original institution of such societies were right or not, as the motive of them was the worship of the Deity, any attempt to turn them into ridicule most certainly must be wrong; the mind of man seldom being acute or attentive enough to distinguish between matters, which to appearance are so intimately connected, as the mode of worship, and the object of it; but generally involving either in the disregard affecting the other. In the present instance indeed, the disregard was designedly levelled at both alike.

To give you a proper notion of the scene in which my master was going to act a capital part, it is necessary to trace the whole from its original.

A person of a flighty imagination, and who possessed a fortune that enabled him to pursue those flights, cloyed with common pleasures, and ambitious of distinguishing himself among his companions, resolved to try if he could not strike out something new, that should at the same time please his own taste, and do honour to his genius.

The meer gratifications of sense, in their utmost extent, not answering his design, he had recourse to the assistance

aſſiſtance of imagination to enhance them. The great *butt*, againſt which men of pleaſure play off all their wit is Religion. Their reaſons, for a practice ſo groſs, are obvious. As the voice of conſcience will ſometimes intrude upon them ſo as to pall their higheſt pleaſures, in the very moment of enjoyment, their firſt endeavour is to ſilence it, which they find by experience cannot be done ſo effectually by any other method, as this of taking off the reſpect paid to Religion, from which conſcience borrows the terrors, that make its admonitions ſo unwelcome. Beſides, they think it ſhews their ſuperiority over the reſt of mankind to laugh at what they are afraid of; as it is alſo convenient for their character of wit, to exert it on topicks, where it is ſafe from being rivalled, by men of real underſtanding.

Theſe weighty conſiderations determined him to ſeaſon his Scheme as high as he could with impiety, in order to make it be the better reliſhed. Accordingly, after due deliberation on a matter of ſuch moment, he at length hit upon a plan that pleaſed him.

In the middle of a large lake upon his eſtate there was an iſland, the natural beauties of whoſe ſituation had been heightened by every improvement of art. On this iſland he erected a building, exactly on the model of the monaſteries, which he had ſeen in other countries; and to make the reſemblance compleat, there was not a vice, that he had ever heard imputed to the inhabitants of them, for practiſing which he did not make proviſion in his. The cellars were ſtored with the choiceſt wines; the larders with the delicacies of every climate; and the *cells* were fitted up, for all the purpoſes of laſciviouſneſs, for which proper objects were alſo provided.

Thus far the ridicule, however criminal in itſelf, may ſeem to have been deſigned only againſt thoſe ſocieties of human inſtitution: But it was beneath his genius and ſpirit to ſtop here. Nothing leſs would ſatisfy him, than to attack the very eſſentials of the Religion eſtabliſhed by the laws of his country, and acknowledged by every ſerious perſon in it, to be divine.

For

For this pious purpoſe, when every thing was prepared for their reception, his next care was to find a fraternity proper for the place. But in this, his rank, and courſe of life made him not long at a loſs. He ſelected from among his intimates a number equal to that of thoſe, who had been at the firſt choſen to inculcate the Religion, which he deſigned to ridicule, whoſe names they aſſumed, as he with equal modeſty and piety did that of the divine author of it: And to ſupply any decreaſe in this number by death, or deſertion from the terrors of reflection, he inſtituted an inferior order of as many more, choſen alſo with the greateſt caution and regard to the latitude of their principles, their fortunes and mirthful accompliſhments.

The probationary office of theſe latter was to attend upon their ſuperiors in the celebration of their myſteries, which were all performed in the chapel of the monaſtery, where no other ſervants were ever permitted to enter, on the moſt common occaſion, as the very *decorations* of it would in a great meaſure have betrayed their ſecrets, the cieling being covered with emblems and devices too groſs to require explanation to the meaneſt capacity; and the walls painted with the pourtraits of thoſe whoſe names and characters they aſſumed, repreſented in attitudes, and actions, horrible to imagination.

Nor was their care to keep their myſteries impenetrably ſecret confined to this excluſion of common ſervants. The diffidence of common guilt made them even diſtruſt each other, till bound to ſecrecy by oaths, and imprecations, receiving their force, from the Religion thus abuſed by them: An abſurdity common among men aſſociated from the moſt flagitious purpoſes.

But ſtrong as the power of ſuperſtition is over weak and wicked minds, (for nothing but the groſſeſt ſuperſtition could make them think oaths in ſuch circumſtance binding!) their ſecrecy was ſecured by a ſtill ſtronger motive, which was fear.

They were ſenſible that even ſuſpicion of ſuch vices would for ever exclude them from the ſociety of all thoſe, whom in deſpite of themſelves, they could not help

help holding in reſpect; and that ſo outrageous an inſult upon the laws was liable to puniſhment from the ſecular power, though they might by their intereſt evade the direct effects of which, yet the imputation would make them ſo obnoxious to the people in general, that they could no longer hope to enjoy any of the lucrative employments of the ſtate, if their reſentment did not ariſe ſtill higher, and make them take that puniſhment into their own hands! and theſe fears prevented the ſecrets from being divulged even by ſuch as had reſolution enough to deſert the ſociety; as they imagined the ſtain could never be ſo effectually expunged, as to ſecure them from thoſe conſequences.

The rites of this ſociety, and the ceremonies obſerved upon admiſſion into it, will be beſt explained by the account of what I ſaw my maſter perform on this occaſion, when he was a candidate for the higher order, having already ſerved his noviciate in the lower.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL's *maſter arrives at the monaſtery. The manner of his being admitted into the ſociety. Character of his competitor. The method he took to revenge the ſociety's injuſtice in preferring* CHRYSAL's *maſter to him. The mirth of the company diſturbed by the entrance of* THE DEVIL, *juſt as he was invoked by* CHRYSAL's *maſter. The effect of ſuch a viſitor upon the company. The* DEVIL *fixes upon* CHRYSAL's *maſter in particular, and makes him ſqueak.*

IT was about four o'clock in the afternoon when my maſter arrived at the verge of the lake, where he no ſooner made the concerted ſignal, than a boat was ſent to ferry him over.

On his landing in the iſland, he went to the monaſtery where he found the ſociety juſt ſitting down to dinner, at which he took his place among them. When they had made a ſhort meal, and drank their ſpirits up to a proper pitch, they retired to their reſpective cells, to prepare for the ſolemnity they were going to celebrate. My maſter then clad in a milk white robe of the fineſt linen, that flowed looſely round him, repaired at the tolling of a bell, to the chapel, the ſcene of all their myſterious rites, and knocking gently thrice at the door, it was opened to him, to the ſound of ſoft and ſolemn muſick.

On his entrance he made a moſt profound obeiſance, and advancing ſlowly towards a table, that ſtood againſt the wall, in the upper end of the chapel, as ſoon as he came to the rails, by which it was ſurrounded, he fell upon his knees, and making a profeſſion of his principles, nearly in the words, but with the moſt groſs perverſion of the ſenſe of the articles of faith of the religion eſtabliſhed in the country, demanded admiſſion within the rails,

rails, the peculiar ſtation of the upper order, where the ſuperior and eleven of the fraternity (the twelfth place was vacant, and now to be filled up) ſtood arrayed in the habits of thoſe, whoſe names and characters they profaned by their aſſumption

When he had finiſhed, another candidate advanced in the like manner, and making his profeſſion, alſo preferred the ſame claim; as there were more who had a right to do, but diſcouraged by the ſuperior merit of theſe two, they had declined their pretenſions for this time.

The brotherhood having heard the competitors with attention, retired to the table, and kneeling around it, the ſuperior repeated a prayer, in the ſame ſtrain and manner with the *profeſſion* of the candidates, to the *Being whom they ſerved* to direct their choice to him of the two moſt worthy of his ſervice.

The ſuperior then proceeded to take the ſuffrages of the reſt, with the ſame mimic ſolemnity; when my maſter being found to have the majority, his election was exultingly attributed to immediate inſpiration, and he was accordingly admitted within the rails, where he received *the name* and *character*, which he was to bear in the ſociety, in a manner not proper to be deſcribed, every the moſt ſacred rite and ceremony of Religion being profaned, all the prayers and hymns of praiſe appointed for the worſhip of the Deity burleſqued by a perverſion to the horrid occaſion.

In this manner the evening was waſted till ſupper-time, when they ſat down to a banquet in the chapel, in honour of the occaſion, of which nothing that the moſt refined luxury, the moſt laſcivious imagination could ſuggeſt to kindle looſe deſire, and provoke and gratify appetite was wanting, both the ſuperiors, and the inferiors, (who were permitted to take their places at the lower end of the table, as ſoon as they had ſerved in the banquet) vying with each other in looſe ſongs and diſſertations of ſuch groſs lewdneſs, and daring impiety, as deſpair may be ſuppoſed to dictate to the damn'd, in both which, my maſter ſhone ſo unrival'd as to bear down the ſuperior ſprightlineſs, wit, and humour of all the reſt; and compenſate for the want of every companionable merit.

But

But while they were in the height of their feſtivity, an affair happened, that interrupted it for a time, and ſhewed their reſolution, particularly that of my maſter, in a proper light.

The perſon, who had that day been his competitor for the honour of admiſſion into the higher order of the ſociety, poſſeſſed the qualifications, which he wanted, in the moſt eminent degree. He had ſuch a flow of ſpirits that it was impoſſible ever to be a moment dull in his company His wit gave charms to every ſubject he ſpoke upon; and his humour diſplayed the foibles of mankind in ſuch colours, as to put even folly out of countenance.

But the ſame vanity, which had firſt made him ambitious of entering into this ſociety, only becauſe it was compoſed of perſons of a rank ſuperior to his own in life, and ſtill kept him in it, tho' upon acquaintance he deſpiſed themſelves, ſullied all theſe advantages. His ſpirits were often ſtretched to extravagance to overpower competition. His humour was debaſed into buffoonery; and his wit was ſo proſtituted to the luſt of applauſe, that he would ſacrifice his beſt friend for a ſcurvy jeſt; and wound the heart of him, whom he would at that very moment hazard his life and fortune to ſerve, only to raiſe a laugh, in which he was alſo aſſiſted by a peculiar archneſs of diſpoſition, and an unlucky expertneſs at carrying his *jeſts into practice*, as he proved upon this occaſion.

Though he diſdained to decline the late competition, as the others did, he had been well aware that my maſter's high rank in life would carry the point in diſpute againſt him; for which injuſtice he reſolved to revenge himſelf in the moſt ſignal manner.

For this purpoſe he had contrived the night before, to bring into his cell a great *Baboon* which he had provided for the occaſion. When the brotherhood retired to their cells after dinner, as I have told you, to prepare for the ceremony, he availed himſelf of the office of keeper of the chapel, which he then filled, to convey this creature, dreſſed up in the phantaſtick garb, in which childiſh imagination cloathes devils, into the chapel,

chapel, where he ſhut him up in a large cheſt, that ſtood there to hold the ornaments, and utenſils of the table, when the ſociety was away. To the ſpring of the lock of this cheſt he faſtened a cord, which he drew under the carpet that was on the floor to his own ſeat, and there brought the end of it through an hole, made for the purpoſe, in ſuch a manner that he could readily find it; and by giving it a pull, open the cheſt, and let the *Baboon* looſe, whenever he pleaſed, without being perceived by any of the company.

Accordingly, when they were all in the height of their mirth, on my maſter's kneeling down, and with hands and eyes raiſed towards Heaven repeating an invocation, in the perverted phraſe of Holy Writ, to the Being whom they ſerved, to come among them, and receive their adorations in perſon, he pulled the cord, and let the animal looſe, who, glad to be delivered from his confinement, gave a ſudden ſpring upon the middle of the table.

The effect which the ſight of ſuch a viſitor had upon them, may be better conceived than expreſſed. Their attention had been ſo fixed upon what my maſter was ſaying, that they perceived not from whence he came; and his appearing ſo critically at the invocation, and in ſuch a ſhape, made them conclude he was *the Being invoked*.

Terrified out of their ſenſes by this thought, they all roared out with one voice, *The Devil! The Devil!* and ſtarting from their ſeats made directly toward the door, tumbling over one another, and over-ſetting every thing in their way.

In the height of this uproar and confuſion, *the Baboon*, frighted at the effects of their fear, happened to leap upon my maſter's ſhoulders, as he lay ſprawling on the floor, who turning about his head and feeling the ſhock, ſaw the animal grinning horribly at him, and concluded the Devil had obeyed his ſummons in good earneſt, and come to carry him bodily away.

Driven as he was to deſpair, by this thought, he ſtrove however in the inſtinctive impulſe of ſelf-preſervation, to ſhake off the invader; but he, inſtead looſing his hold, on his repeated efforts, only clung

to

to him the closer, clasping his paws around his neck, and chattering with spight at his ear. This compleated the caitiff's distress. Every shadow of spirit failed him, and conscious guilt suggesting to him the meaning of this unintelligible jargon, he attempted in the blindness of his fear to move the very Devil to pity, by his pathetick wailings, and supplications.

'Spare me, gracious Devil!' (said he) 'spare a 'wretch, who never was sincerely your servant! I sinned only from vanity of being in the fashion! thou 'knowest I never have been half so wicked, as I pretended; I never have been able to commit the thou'sandth part of the vices, which I have boasted of. 'Take not then the advantage of that vanity; but 'judge me only from my actions. I knew not that 'thou wouldst have come, or I should never have in'voked thee! leave me therefore, and go to those, 'who are more truly devoted to thy service. I am but 'half a sinner. My conscience always flew in my face 'when I committed any crime; my heart gave the lie 'to my tongue, when I gloried in my vices; and I 'trembled at the damnation I affected to brave! O 'spare me therefore, at least for this time, till I have 'served thee better. I am as yet but half a sinner.'

CHAP. XIX.

The DEVIL *is degraded to a* BABOON, *and his appearance well accounted for, which restores the mirth and courage of the company, and particularly of* CHRYSAL'S *master, who exerts himself to recover his character. The appearance of the be-deviled* BABOON *is traced next day to his introducer, who at the instance of* CHRYSAL'S *master is expelled the society for presuming to ridicule their rites. Farther consequences of this affair make the superior break up his monastery, and build a church.*

WHILE my master was making this essay of his eloquence upon the *Baboon*, the person who had brought him there took the opportunity of the

conſternation the whole company was in, to open one of the windows unperceived by them for the animal to make his eſcape, which he no ſooner ſaw, than he made directly to it, giving my maſter an happy releaſe.

Before he could get clear off though, one of the company, who was bolder than the reſt, having muſtered reſolution to raiſe his head, got a full view of him, and perceiving what he was, juſt as my maſter concluded his ſupplication, 'Your prayers are heard!' (ſaid he, ſtarting up and ſpeaking as ſoon as a burſt of laughter gave him utterance) 'your prayers are heard for this 'time; and that Devil of a great *He baboon*, that's 'juſt gone out of the window, deſpiſing *half a ſinner*, his ſpared you, till you are fitter for his ſervice.'—

At hearing theſe words, they all aroſe from the floor, where they had lain ſprawling on top of one another, and looking in amazement, at him who had ſpoke them; 'Courage, my friends! (ſaid he) 'this is but a falſe 'alarm! our maſter is not ſo ready to come for us 'when we call him, or we ſhould none of us all be 'here now. How a *Baboon* though ſhould come here 'to ſcar us all out of our little wits in ſuch a manner, 'the Devil may tell you, if he will, for I cannot; but 'I'll ſwear I ſaw one go out of the window.'——

'And I'll ſwear too, that I ſaw him come in at it;' (replied the author of the miſchief, who ſaw no way to eſcape detection, but by preventing farther enquiry by this bold lie) 'as I juſt then happened to look about 'to ſee from whence the wind came, that blew upon 'my poll.'——

This eclairciſſement ſatisfied them all: they inſtantly ſet the room to rights, and plaſtering up their broken ſhins and noſes, ſat down to conclude their carouſal, reſuming their former ſtrain, in which they all exerted themſelves in an uncommon manner, to wipe off the diſgrace of their late *ſqueaking*, particularly my maſter who *out-did his uſual out-doing*, in profaneneſs, blaſphemy, and wickedneſs of every kind, to recover his character, and convince them he was more than *half a ſinner*.

They held in this hand, till nature ſunk under the fatigue, when they retired to ſleep off their debauch, in their *cells*, where, as I ſaid, proper proviſion had been

been made for them, to reduce the theory of the day into practice, in the intervals of reſt.

Though the affair of the *Baboon* had paſſed off ſo cleverly, while their ſpirits were in ſuch a flurry, when they came to enquire more coolly into it next day, the whole trick came out. It had been impoſſible to convey him into the monaſtery, without the privity of ſome of the ſervants, who had all ſo often *felt the jeſts* of this gentleman, that they were glad of an opportunity of being revenged upon him now, by making the diſcovery.

This account, confirmed by ſome circumſtances in his behaviour, which they had not attended to at the time, plainly pointing out the guilty perſon, the ſuperiors adjourned directly to the chapel to conſult how they ſhould proceed on ſo delicate an occaſion For though they had always highly approved of ſuch *wit*, when *practiſed* upon others, they looked upon the application of it to themſelves in the moſt heinous light, eſpecially in ſuch an inſtance as this, the conſequences of which had expoſed them to the contempt of each other, by detecting their *weakneſs*, and ſhewing that the guilt in which they gloried was only feigned.

Mortifying as this was to their vanity, the thought however, that the caſe was general, afforded them ſome conſolation However, to remedy the effect of this, and prevent a repetition of the like diſgrace, it was propoſed, after mature deliberation, and much learned arguments on the queſtion, to bury what was paſt, by a ſolemn act of amneſty, and make a ſpecial law, whoſe obſervation ſhould be enforced *by an oath*, that no member ſhould ever after preſume to attempt exerciſing his wit upon the ſociety, in any manner, or by any means whatſoever; on taking which oath, and aſking pardon upon his knees, at the door of the chapel, the offender ſhould be forgiven.

To this propoſal, they all aſſented, except my maſter, who for private reaſons thought the latter part of it much too mild for ſo flagrant a crime. He had long cheriſhed a ſecret grudge againſt the other, who not only often pointed his wit againſt him, in a manner that he could not digeſt nor knew how to reſent, it being as

polite as it was keen, but alſo put him conſtantly to the expence of double wickedneſs, the only qualification in which he could poſſibly ſhine, to avoid being totally eclipſed by him: His deſire of revenge alſo was ſtrongeſt on this occaſion, as he had ſuffered the deepeſt diſgrace.

Accordingly he exerted all his eloquence, to ſhew *the enormity of the crime of attempting to turn any of the rites and ceremonies eſtabliſhed by the laws of the ſociety into ridicule*; the letting of which eſcape without adequate puniſhment, he ſaid, would argue weakneſs and want of ſpirit in them, and muſt end in the ruin of their authority; for which weighty reaſons he propoſed that the offender ſhould be directly expelled the ſociety in form, as the only effectual way to vindicate their dignity, and prevent others from offering it the like inſult for the future.

This gave the affair a new turn. They all took fire at the thought of their dignity's being inſulted, and expelled him that moment, without even waiting to hear him in his own defence. But he ſoon had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing himſelf amply avenged

The care they took to keep every thing they did ſecret, had long awoke the curioſity of the neighbourhood, who were the more ſevere in their gueſſes, the leſs able they were to gueſs right. But the affair of the *Baboon*, whom the ſervants got ſight of, before he could be caught, and whether miſled by his dreſs, or miſrepreſented by deſign, gave out to be *the Devil*, was no ſooner known, than a formal ſtory was propagated over the whole country, that the end of their meeting was to worſhip the Devil, to whom this chapel was dedicated, and who had *often* been ſeen among them in variety of ſhapes.

Scandal always meets eaſy credit. The ſtory was believed by many, and repeated by more as if they believed it, never loſing any thing in the repetition; till ſuch an univerſal alarm was raiſed among the people (who are content to infringe the precepts of religion, without denying its authority) that the ſuperior, whoſe ſeat was in the neighbourhood, found it neceſſary to diſſolve the ſociety, and effacing every trace of it, convert the building to the better uſe of a pleaſure houſe,

in

in which he entertained all his neighbours in general whenever he was in the country: Beſides which, he alſo built a church, on an eminence near his houſe, that anſwered the double purpoſe, of convincing the populace of his regard to Religion, and of making a beautiful termination, to a viſta which he had juſt cut thro' a wood, in his park.

I have anticipated theſe circumſtances to ſatisfy your curioſity; as I have alſo omitted many, and ſoftened more particulars in this account, which were too horrid to have been repreſented in their proper colours.

CHAP. XX.

A farther account of the rules of the convent; with ſome ſtriking inſtances of œconomy. A ſeeming inconſiſtency accounted for, from a principle not ſufficiently underſtood. Some remarkable effects of vanity. Reaſon of the abuſe of wealth.

YOU are aſtoniſhed how ſuch ſcenes of debauchery and excеſs could be ſupported, either by the fortune of the entertainer, or the conſtitutions of his gueſts; but this ſhall be explained.

To prevent ſatiety or fatigues, theſe meetings were never protracted beyond a week at a time; nor held oftner than twice in a year; but which frugality of pleaſure, they were always returned to, with the keenneſs of novelty. And as for the expence of them, that was defrayed jointly by the whole community; (the ſuperior contributing nothing more, than any other member, except the firſt coſt of building the *convent*, which he thought himſelf amply recompenſed for, by the honour of having ſtruck out the plan;) and regulated by the ſtricteſt œconomy; the ſlaves of their luſts being ſent back to the brothels, from whence they had been brought; and the ſervants of their luxury diſcharged, at the end of every meeting; and no more retained for the reſt of the year, than an old man and woman who took care of the place.

To you who have ſupported the dignity of your na-

ture, by preferring the pleaſures of that reaſon, which was given to diſtinguiſh man from brutes, to thoſe of ſenſe, which they enjoy in common with him, the picture of this whole ſcene muſt appear *over-charged*, and irreconcileable with the great principles of human action, which always propoſe ſome *good*, either preſent or future, however the judgment may err in the thing propoſed. But more acquaintance with life would ſolve this difficulty to you.

The general motive for attempting to turn Religion into ridicule has been already explained. But as ſome are ſeen to give into this practice, who ſeem to cultivate their reaſon with moſt ſucceſs; and whoſe actions, and even inclinations appear not to have the remoteſt tendency contrary to moral virtue, it may be proper to account for ſuch an exception.

The firſt principle of action, impreſſed by nature on every thing that lives, is *ſelf-preſervation*. From this *brute* animals, which by *neceſſity* proceed regularly in the courſe preſcribed for them, never ſwerve: But the *rational* animal, man, bewildered in his own imaginations by the abuſe of that *liberty*, which was given him to enhance the merit of his obedience to the dictates of *reaſon*, often ſubſtitutes another in its place, by whoſe impulſe he acts in direct oppoſition to it.

This is *vanity*; the real ſource of that ambition, which courts danger, and plunges with open eyes into deſtruction, however ſpeciouſly it may be diſguiſed under the pompous titles of love of glory, and regard to the publick good, as well as of moſt of the extravagancies, and abſurdities, which puzzle ſuperficial obſervers, and make them preſumptuouſly impeach as a defect in the work of nature, their own neglect and perverſion of its laws.

A particular enquiry into the effects of this *ſuppoſitious* principle, many of which, as I ſaid, are blazoned as the brighteſt virtues, while more are acknowledged to be the moſt atrocious crimes; or how nearly ſuch virtues and crimes, proceeding thus from the ſame ſource, may be allied, though curious and intereſting in itſelf, is not neceſſary here. It is ſufficient to obſerve, that its power is able to break the force of habit,

bit, reconcile contradictions, and confound the eſſential difference of things; to cope with *prejudice*, and overrule the *infirmities* of nature.

This it is, for inſtance, that makes the *conſtitutional* coward, who trembles at the thought of danger, and would ſee his country ruined, rather than draw his ſword in its defence; *fight duels* for a doubtful punctilio of empty ceremony; the *ſuperſtitious* wretch, who finds *omens*, in *ſpilled ſalt*, and *croſſed ſtraws*, and *ſees Goblins* and *Devils* in the dark, profeſs infidelity, ridicule Providence, and dare the wrath of Heaven, by inſults and bravadoes; and laſtly, this it is, that makes the hoary Sage, whoſe life has been regulated by the ſtricteſt principles of morality and religion, while paſſion might have rebelled againſt them, commence Libertine in the impotence of old age, and glory in vices he has loſt the power to practiſe. Of the juſtice of theſe remarks the members of this ſociety, of which vanity was the cement, as it hath been the origin, afforded the moſt glaring proofs.

You wonder what there could be to be vain of, in ſuch an aſſociation! but you do not reflect, that vanity is never the reſult of real worth. The falſe glare of publick eſtimation reflects it from the vileſt and moſt reproachful objects.

The inſtitutor of this ſociety was *admired* for every polite accompliſhment, every power of pleaſing in converſation; and the firſt ſet he choſe were all of the ſame caſt. This, with their rank and fortunes, and above all, the myſteries of the inſtitution, which ſet curioſity on fire, and gave imagination room to form the moſt flattering ideas of it, made admiſſion into it, an object of univerſal ambition, as it ſeemed a proof of every member's meriting the ſame character; and when once admitted, a vicious fear of ridicule made too many aſhamed to quit it; and even they, who did, were precluded from diſcovering any thing that might deter others, by the ſeceſy to which they were ſworn.

There is one thing more, which from the particular circumſtances of your own life affects you more than any other, in this account. This is the folly and ingratitude of laviſhing the bleſſing of wealth to the diſho-

nour of the donor; and with ſo little regard to its real uſe. But this, as has been the caſe in other inſtances, proceeds from want of better acquaintance with life.

It has been remarked by travellers, that in thoſe parts of the earth, where the bleſſings of nature are beſtowed with greateſt liberality, the people ſeem leaſt ſenſible of them; and are ſunk in the groſſeſt vice; as if reaſon and virtue were incompatible with the good things of the world.

The reaſon of this remark holds with reſpect to wealth in other countries. Provided to profuſion with every thing they want, the rich look no farther than to the gratification of their appetites and paſſions; as the means to procure which are in their poſſeſſion, they acknowledge no obligation to the power, which firſt gave, and ſtill preſerves the enjoyment of them; but on the contrary, affect to ſhew their independance, by proſtituting it to purpoſes, directly contrary to his declared pleaſure; and this cauſes that abuſe of wealth, which generally mars the bleſſing, and makes the gift of it ſo dangerous.

CHAP. XXI.

Account of the members of the ſociety. The hiſtory of the ſuperior. The particular qualifications by which he aroſe in life. Succeſs in a private inſtance encourages him to try his talents in an higher ſphere, from which he ſoon deſcends which diſgrace. A ſtriking inconſiſtency in his character.

I SEE you deſire to have ſome account of the ſeveral members of ſo extraordinary a ſociety. When the great lines which diſtinguiſh the characters of mankind are marked by virtues, or even by ſuperior abilities, that dazzle ſuperficial obſervation, by the ſplendour of their effects, and paſs for ſuch, however different in the tendency of their exertions; the delineation affords pleaſure; but on the contrary where thoſe lines are all diſtorted

torted by vice and folly; and diſtinguiſhed from each other only by different modes and degrees of them, the contemplation, is a pain; and to paint them a taſk ſo diſagreeable, that nothing but an impartial regard to truth could make it be undertaken. However your curioſity ſhall be gratified.

As the *convent* was dedicated to pleaſure; you may imagine that play made a part of their entertainment. Contrary indeed to the ſcheme of all other parties of pleaſure, it was not the firſt object of their meeting; and only ſerved to fill up the intervals between other pleaſures, which nature without ſome reſpite could not ſupport in ſuch exceſs. The circulation however, even in this *piddling* for mere amuſement, gave me an opportunity of taking a view of all their characters; ſuch of which as contained any thing worthy of your notice, for you muſt not expect it from them all, I will give ſome general ſketches of.

As the looks of a man are generally a comment on his heart, I will place the whole company in your view, as I have done on other occaſions, to aſſiſt you in forming a proper notion of their characters. At the head of the tables ſits the ſuperior. You ſee every eye is expreſſively fixed upon him, in admiration at the vivacity, humour, and wit on all he ſays, while by an art peculiarly happy, he alone ſeems unconſcious of his own pre-eminence.

Theſe talents, which from the intoxication of preſent applauſe, are much oftener of prejudice than advantage to the poſſeſſor, by diverting from more ſolid purſuits, proved the foundation of his exalted rank and fortune; becauſe always directed by the deepeſt and moſt ſolid addreſs.

The firſt inſtance in which this addreſs was diſplayed, was in his own family. He had a diſtant relation who had ſpent his youth in ſuch buſy ſcenes, as left not time for his imagination to wander in ſearch of amuſement. To a mind accuſtomed to be wound up to ſuch a pitch, the charms of a converſation like his were a relaxation, irreſiſtibly engaging. He inſinuated himſelf inſenſibly into his favour, and by ſeeming to have nothing in view, but his pleaſure, led him as he pleaſed himſelf

himſelf not only into all the lengths of his own libertiniſm, ſo as to be a member of this ſociety, when the decline of life, at leaſt, ſhould have ſuggeſted more ſerious thoughts; but alſo at his death to reward his complaiſance with a much larger portion of his fortune, than he had any claim to from conſanguinity or the preference of reaſon.

Such ſucceſs encouraged his ambition to higher attempts. Introduced by the ſame qualifications to the acquaintance of *the great*, he not only gained their favour by them, but alſo impoſed them upon them for abilities of an higher claſs ſo far, that being ſecure of his ſubſerviency to their deſigns, they admitted him to a ſhare of their power.

But in this he had deceived himſelf as well as them, as he found to their diſappointment and his own extreme confuſion, upon the very firſt trial of his political talents, when he ſhewed in the ſtrongeſt light the difference between the abilities requiſite to raiſe a laugh, and rule a nation.

He had ſenſe enough however to ſee his miſtake, before it had involved him in any conſequences, from which he could not recede without danger as well as diſgrace; and prudently ſacrificing his ambition to his ſafety, he turned off all with a laugh, and returned to the enjoyment of thoſe pleaſures for which nature ſeemed to have ſo particularly deſigned him. Whether that enjoyment is as ſincere and undiſturbed though, as ſhould appear from his looks and conduct, is a point not ſo certain, as you may be apt to imagine.

The principles, on which this ſociety was originally inſtituted, and from which it has never deviated, *the profeſſed ridicule of moral Virtue and Religion*, ſhould ſeem to have proceeded from an utter diſbelief of a Deity; or at leaſt, a fearleſs defiance of his power; but contrary to this, there ſtarts not at his own ſhadow, a more abject ſlave to ſuperſtition and all its fooliſh fears, than he was at the time of his inſtituting it, and ſtill remains.

Such an inconſiſtence requires explanation to you, whoſe notions of life are formed ſolely from rational ſpeculation.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXII.

Continuation of the hiſtory of the ſuperior. The inconſiſtency of his character accounted for. The reaſon of his being ſent early to travel for education. Political principles all neceſſary to be attended to, in a tutor. The method and effect of his tutor's care to inſtruct him in Religion. A frightful ſtory gives riſe to a frightful dream, which is interrupted ſtill more frightfully. A tremendous apparition terrifies him into a ſwoon. Account of the apparition.

THE political principles of his family being in avow'd oppoſition to their Sovereign, the earlieſt care was taken to inſtil the ſame into him; and the ripeneſs of his parts and genius flattered them with a promiſe of his future conſequence in the ſtate.

For this purpoſe, before reaſon ſhould have time to be convinced by experience of the injuſtice, and danger of ſuch deſigns, he was ſent abroad to be educated in a country, where every object ſhould concur to prejudice him againſt the laws and conſtitution of his own, and the opportunity of perſonal intercourſe confirm his attachment to him, whoſe intereſt he was intended to promote.

The publick conduct of his life has ſufficiently ſhewn the ſucceſs of this ſcheme: as an incidental circumſtance in the execution of it will alſo account for the inconſiſtencies in his private character.

The religious principles eſtabliſhed in the country, whither he was thus ſent for education; and the political ones, it was deſigned he ſhould aſſiſt to eſtabliſh at home, were ſo intimately and eſſentially connected, that it was impoſſible to find a tutor for him ſufficiently attached to the latter, to anſwer the purpoſe of his family, who was not alſo at leaſt ſecretly inclined to, even if he did not openly profeſs, the former.

But

But this made no difficulty. Religion is in reality the thing leaſt thought of, however pompouſly it may be profeſſed in political ſchemes. They ſcrupled not therefore to commit his tender mind to the influence of ſuch an one, regardleſs what impreſſions he might make upon it, beſides thoſe they deſired: An opportunity which he did not fail to take advantage of.

Accordingly as ſoon as the tutor and his pupil were ſettled in the place of their deſignation, the former began his deſign, by diſplaying on every occaſion the excellence and importance of the ceremonies and rites of the Religion profeſſed there, as the objects moſt likely to ſtrike the levity of youth, always complaining with a contemptuous concern of the want of ſuch in that of his own country; not chuſing to ſpeak more directly at firſt, for fear of giving them any alarm.

But artful as this method was, he had the diſappointment to ſee, it did not ſucceed ſo well as he could wiſh. Though from the manner of his pupil's earlieſt education, it was eaſy enough to ſink his own Religion in his opinion, yet ſome circumſtances rendered the raiſing of any other in its place, a matter of more difficulty, than might have been obviouſly apprehended. His natural quickneſs and turn of ridicule made him ſee every thing in the moſt diſadvantageous light, at the firſt glance, at the ſame time that his diſſipation and levity prevented his attending to the abſtruſer arguments, often neceſſary to eſtabliſh the credit of matters of ſuch importance beyond the reach of rational doubt: ſo that all the pains his tutor was piouſly taking to enlarge his faith, threatened to work the contrary effect, of making him an infidel.

Alarmed at this, the tutor, whoſe bigotted credulity had ſwallowed every fiction of ſuperſtition, had always ſome miraculous ſtory of a *judgment* or *apparition* ready to refute the ſcoffs of his pupil, and confirm the truth of whatever he himſelf advanced. The conſtant repetition of ſuch tales, which he plainly ſhewed his own belief of, inſenſibly made ſuch an impreſſion on his pupil's imagination, as perſuaded him of their poſſibility at leaſt, if he was not abſolutely convinced of the truth

truth of every thing in proof of which they were alledged; and filled him with fears, for which a good foundation had before been laid in the nurſery.

When his mind was thus prepared to catch at every terror, his tutor took him one day to ſee the exhibition of one of thoſe miracles, which are ſaid to be wrought at the ſhrine of a conteſted ſaint; and which really weaken the credit of the Religion, they were deviſed to ſupport.

The abſurdity was too ſtriking to eſcape his obſervation. He turned it into the moſt poignant ridicule, in ſpite of all his tutor's pains to defend it; who finding that his arguments had no effect, had recourſe to his uſual proof of an *apparition*, which he dreſſed up in every colour and circumſtance of horror, to make it have the greater weight.

His pupil took not more than uſual notice of the matter, whilſe light and company diverted his thoughts; but when he went to bed, and found himſelf alone, and in the dark, the whole flaſhed upon him in all its terrors, heightened in every inſtance, by the livelineſs of his own imagination.

What he felt in ſuch a ſituation may eaſier be conceived than expreſſed. He covered up his head with the cloaths; and lay ſweating and trembling, till his mind was wearied with dwelling on the ſame thoughts, and he ſunk into a kind of ſlumber.

But this was far from giving him relief. He was no ſooner aſleep, than imagination, now in her own empire, placed him, in the midſt of the ſcene, which had juſt before been ſo elaborately deſcribed to him, by his tutor, from the contemplation of which he was delivered only to ſuffer ſtill more ſeverely; being awakened by ſounds uncooth enough to ſtartle, at ſuch a time, the moſt reſolute mind unacquainted with them.

Such a continuation realized all the horrors of his dream. He ſtarted up; and turning in the inſtinctive curioſity of affright to that part of the room, from whence the ſounds ſtill continued to come, ſaw four glaring eye balls fixed upon him, at the ſame time that a voice diſtinctly articulated, but in a tremendous tone,

and

and language which he did not underſtand, thundered directly in his ear.

The darkneſs, which prevented his ſeeing the bodies, to which thoſe eyes belonged, and his ignorance of the import of the ſounds, only added to his fright by giving room to imagination, not only to form the moſt horrible conceptions of them, but alſo to apprehend them ſtill more horrible than he could conceive. He was not able to ſupport ſuch an attack; but giving one helpleſs ſhriek, ſunk back in a ſwoon.

His tutor, who lay in the next room, and had been awakened by the ſame ſounds, but was not ſo much terrified at them, both becauſe his mind was not ſo well prepared for terrors, and that he was acquainted with their cauſe, heard him ſhriek, and knowing his voice, ran to him, imagining he was engaged in a conflict, in which he might want aſſiſtance, with the *cats*, which he heard in the room; for from two of thoſe animals, which finding the window open, had choſen it for the ſcene of their amours, had thoſe dreadful ſounds proceeded.

CHAP. XXIII.

Continuation. Behaviour of the tutor on finding his pupil in a ſwoon. He recovers; and terrifies his tutor by miſtaking him for a ſaint. Charity begins at home. The tutor ſagaciouſly gueſſes, at the meaning of the miſtake; and piouſly reſolves to improve it. The pupil's full and true account of the apparition, with the tutor's honeſt addition to it. His repentance, and converſion. His tutor moderates his zeal for weighty reaſons. He relapſes; and his tutor for private reaſons divulges the whole affair. The method he took to invalidate the ſtory.

YOU may judge how he was affected at ſeeing the perſon, upon whom all his hopes of wealth and preferment were founded, in ſuch a ſituation. Awkward

at

at the beſt, he now knew not how to attempt giving him any aſſiſtance, nor had even the preſence of mind to call any one who could, ſo great was his embarraſſment and confuſion. Nature however ſoon delivered him from his diſtreſs, and reſtored his hopes, by the recovery of his pupil.

As ſoon as he came a little to himſelf, he ſtared wildly round him for ſome moments, and then fixing his eyes upon his tutor, who ſtill ſtood gaping in amazement at him, he miſtook him, from his being in his ſhirt, for the Saint that ran in his head, his imagination ſtill continuing the former ſcene, and holding up his hands in a ſuppliant poſture, as he lay trembling on his back, 'O mercy, gracious Saint!' (ſaid he) 'Have mercy on my youth! never will I again preſume 'to ridicule any of the ſacred rites of Religion! never 'will I admit a doubt of any thing it commands me to 'believe! O mercy! mercy.'——Saying which words he fainted away again.

This addreſs, one word of which the tutor did not underſtand, threw him into a fright almoſt as great as that of his pupil. He ſtood for ſome time ſtupified by aſtoniſhment, till the cold reminding him that he was in his ſhirt, care for his own health conquered every other concern, and made him go to put on his cloaths before he attempted to do any thing for the other.

While he was dreſſing himſelf, he conſidered what his pupil had ſaid, with rather more attention than his fear had permitted before, and recollecting the ſubject of their converſation the preceding evening concluded that Heaven had made uſe of ſome ſupernatural means to ſubdue his infidelity, the impreſſion of which remaining ſtill upon his mind, had occaſioned his miſtaking him in the manner he did, for a Saint; (for that he ſhould be terrified to that degree by the ſcreaming of the cats, never came into his head) and piouſly reſolved to contribute his aſſiſtance to the deception, by taking no notice that he had been with him before, or even denying it, if he ſaw occaſion.

With this intention, he returned to his pupil, determined though not to diſcloſe his ſuſpicion, till the other

ſhould

ſhould make ſome diſcovery to direct him more certainly how to proceed.

His pupil, who was juſt come to himſelf, knew him directly now he was dreſſed, and catching his hand eagerly as ſoon as he came within his reach, 'O my 'deareſt, my beſt friend!' (ſaid he preſſing it to his lips) 'What have I ſuffered ſince I ſaw you? How 'dearly have I paid for the profaneneſs, and infidelity 'of which you have ſo often reproved me, with pious 'and paternal care. But never will I be guilty of the 'like again. I reſign myſelf implicitly to your direc-'tion; and will from this hour believe every thing you 'require me.'———

His tutor, after giving him ſome ſpiritual comfort, and encouraging his perſeverance in this pious reſolution, deſired to know what had been the happy occaſion of it, to which the other anſwered, that *ſome little time after he went to bed, the room was ſuddenly enlightened in a manner not to be deſcribed, when the apparition, of which he had given him an account the evening before, ſtood before him wrapt in blue flames, and breathing ſmoak and ſulphur; and calling to him in a voice that appalled his ſoul, denounced Heaven's vengeance againſt his infidelity, which he was juſt going to put in execution, when the holy Saint, whoſe miracles he had ſo impiouſly turned into ridicule, appeared all robed in white, and circled round with glory; and interpoſing between him, and the ſpectre, the latter gave a ſhriek that ſhook the room, and then vaniſhed in a flame of fire; upon which the Saint turned to him with a look ineffably benign, and exhorting him to repentance, gave him his benediction, and diſappeared.*

Ready as his tutor was to believe every thing, that exceeded belief, when alledged in the cauſe of Religion, the circumſtance of his own having been miſtaken for a Saint, ſtaggered his faith in all the reſt, and made him for once juſtly conclude that the whole miracle was no more than a fiction of that fear with which the ſcreaming of the cats ſtruck him in his ſleep, for he now plainly traced the effects of their voices.

However, far from undeceiving him, he improved upon

upon the thought; and as ſoon as his pupil concluded his tale, with a grave face and ſolemn air added a ſequel to it, of equal truth, but dictated by a very different degree of veracity; the former being deceived himſelf, and having eked out the illuſions of his fear, as diſtracted imagination ſuggeſted to him; whereas the latter aggravated thoſe illuſions, by untruths premeditately deviſed to confirm that deception.

He ſaid, *that grieved at the danger with which an unhappy prejudice of education threatened the ſpiritual ſafety of one ſo dear to him, inſtead of lying down to reſt, he had fallen upon his knees, and poured out his ſoul, in prayer and ſupplication, to Heaven to enlighten his (pupil's) mind, and convince him of his errors, in which holy exerciſe he had continued ever ſince, till this moment, when in the impulſe of a perſuaſion, which he now perceived to have been divinely inſpired, that his prayers were heard, he came to ſatisfy himſelf of the reality of ſo miraculous an event, for which he begged him to join in returning immediate thanks to Heaven, and the bleſſed Saint, who had wrought it.*

This compleated the deception of his pupil, ſo far as to make him believe the truth of ſome parts of his own tale, which he was not altogether ſo certain of before. He aroſe therefore, and reconciling himſelf to the faith of his tutor, by the ſtrongeſt, and moſt full profeſſions, dedicated the remainder of the night with him to prayer, and pious converſation.

In the firſt heat of his devotion, he was for making the whole affair publick, and openly joining himſelf to that Religion, whoſe truth was thus confirmed to him. But his tutor moderated the fervency of his zeal, ſenſible that ſuch a ſtep would not only defeat the political deſigns of his friends, which muſt be carried on under a maſque, and in whoſe ſucceſs his own wiſhes were moſt warmly intereſted; but alſo overturn his own hopes of being well rewarded for the care of his education, by a church living of great revenue, that was in the gift of one of his pupil's relations, who had promiſed it to him, as ſoon as the incumbent, then ſinking under all the infirmities of extreme old age, ſhould

ſhould die: For his religious principles never interfered with his intereſt

For theſe moſt weighty reaſons, though, as you may imagine, he communicated only the former, he prevailed upon his convert to be content with the private practice, without the profeſſion of his new faith, till he ſhould in the fulneſs of time be ſo happy as to contribute his aſſiſtance to the great event, which ſhould eſtabliſh it in his own country.

Such an argument could not fail of effect, upon one who found the fervour of his devotion cool ſo faſt, that in a few days the whole matter was entirely reverſed, and his practice as libertine as ever, though fear of ſeeing any more ſpectres reſtrained his profeſſions within more decent bounds. For ſo deeply was the dread of them imprinted on his mind, that to this day he dares not to ſleep by himſelf, or be a moment alone in the dark: Though his tutor ſoon after his return home, divulged the whole affair, as far as it affected not himſelf, with the addition of many circumſtances, if poſſible ſtill more contemptibly ridiculous than the true, to revenge his procuring the living for one of his raking companions, and ingratiate himſelf with a particular enemy of his, from whom he expected a recompence for ſo pleaſing a piece of ſcandal; to invalidate which was one of his pupil's motives for inſtituting this ſociety.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIV.

Account of the members continued. Hiſtory of one who turned libertine, in ſpeculation, after he had loſt the power of being ſo in practice. How this happened; the force of literary vanity; and the reaſon why it is ſtronger than any other. Inſtances of the advantages reaped from encouraging genius. A new method of flattery is ſucceſsful where all others had failed, and by a maſter-ſtroke makes vanity gain a ſignal triumph over virtue.

AT the right hand of the ſuperior you ſee one, whoſe example ſhould be a warning to mankind never to be off their guard againſt the allurements of vice, while there is any poſſibility, however remote and improbable, of their falling into it.

While youth might have been pleaded in excuſe of paſſion; and the buſy application of manhood extenuated any ſpeculative errors in opinion, his conduct had been regulated by the ſtricteſt regard to the principles of moral virtue, and the precepts of Religion. But in the evening of his days, when all that heat and hurry give place to cool reflection, and the ſerenity of the proſpect more than compenſates for its approaching cloſe, the whole ſcene was wretchedly reverſed, and his ſetting ſun overcaſt, with a cloud of vices moſt blameable in any ſtage of life, but aggravated ten thouſand-fold in his, to which they were unnatural.

I have told you before, that vanity was the cauſe of a fall, ſo reproachful to humanity: The manner though of its operating upon one, who ſeemed to be removed ſo far beyond its reach, is worthy of attention.

In no inſtance is the power of vanity ſo tyrannically exerted over the human heart, as when it ariſes from an opinion of literary merit. The reaſon is obvious.

Real

Real learning is the moſt effectual check to vanity, as it ſhews the inſtability of its foundation. When therefore any thing that makes pretence, however falſely, to that name, ſeems to adminiſter to its ſupport, it inſtantly looks upon itſelf as above controul.

Though early engagement in the active ſcenes of his country's ſervice had prevented his making any great proficiency in the more abſtruſe purſuits of ſpeculation, his natural inclination to them, directed by a taſte formed by the beſt education, made him embrace all opportunities of patronizing every advance in ſcience, and improvement in the finer arts.

The liberality with which he indulged this inclination ſoon marked him out to the attacks of every needy adventurer in the trade of letters. Projectors conſulted him on their ſchemes. Poets ſubmitted their works to his correction. His virtues, among which munificence was never forgot, were the inexhauſted theme of panegyrick; and dedications declared to the world his abilities, and knowledge.

Adulation ſo groſs was an affront to reaſon. He rejected with juſt contempt the praiſes to which he knew himſelf not entitled; and was ſuperior to the flattery, which compaſſion for the flatterer often made him ſeem to pay for. Happy had he always preſerved the ſame delicacy!

Among the crouds of paraſites, who lay in wait thus for his favour, was a perſon, whom idleneſs ſeduced to prefer this abject ſtate of dependance to the purſuit of a liberal profeſſion, which he had been bred to: A baſeneſs aggravated by his poſſeſſing every qualification neceſſary to have made him eminent in any ſtate

This man, who had thoroughly ſtudied the human heart, ſoon ſaw that any direct attack upon his patron would prove ineffectual. He therefore ſtruck out a new ſcheme, the depth of which ſecur'd it from detection, tho' at the ſame time, the difficulty of carrying it into execution would have diſcharged any one, leſs anxious for ſucceſs, and confident of his own abilities. He diſguiſed the ſtrongeſt flattery under the maſque of the moſt cynical bluntneſs, and candour, and

and inſtead of praiſing all he did, and echoing in aſſent every word he ſpoke, he miſſed no occaſion of differing in opinion with him, declaring he thought that being, who could debaſe the dignity of his nature ſo far as to give him his judgment to another, from any other motive than rational conviction, unworthy of the name of man.

A behaviour ſo ſingular, neceſſarily attracted the notice of his patron, as the manner in which it was carried on, ſoon won his favour: For in all the debates of any moment, which this champion for liberty of thought held with him, he managed with ſuch delicate art, as to lead him (his patron) to confute him, though frequently contrary to the opinion with which he had originally ſet out: In trifles indeed, where being foiled could reflect no diſgrace, he proceeded not with that caution, but often gained a victory, for which he laughed at himſelf when it was won.

But with others he obſerved not ſuch moderation. Be the ſubject what it would, he exerted all his powers, (and great as I have ſaid they were) till he ſilenced at leaſt, if he could not convince his adverſary, over whom he then triumphed in all the inſolence of ſuperiority.

Such a method could not fail of ſucceſs! his patron, ſure of coming off with honour, ſought every opportunity of entering to debate with him, and contracted an eſteem for one who as he thought had thus diſcovered to him his own abilities, while every one elſe declined entering into a conteſt, which always involved them in diſgrace.

Encouraged by this ſucceſs, he boldly ventured upon a ſtroke, the event of which was to decide his hopes. In gratification of his own depraved taſte he had written a treatiſe in which the groſſeſt libertiniſm was ſet in ſo advantageous and alluring a light, and the arguments againſt it evaded with ſo much plauſibility and true wit, as were almoſt ſufficient to put virtue out of countenance, and debauch its ſincereſt votaries.

The contradiction between ſuch principles, and the practice of his patron, through his whole life, would have deterred any one leſs enterprizing, and experienced

rienced in the weakneſſes of human nature, from diſcloſing them; but he had lately made ſome diſcoveries, which emboldened him even to puſh his deſigns much farther, than owning himſelf the author of that book.

While the vigour of life had enabled his patron to perſiſt in buſier purſuits, he had deſpiſed the flattery paid to his literary merit; but as ſoon as the infirmities of age rendered him unfit for ſuch employment, he with a natural partiality gave the preference to that pre-eminence, which he thought ſtill within his reach, and affected to ſlight all fame, that was not founded on the nobler labours of the mind.

This was a ſufficient direction to the paraſite. He immediately ſhewed his book with a myſterious air, to ſeveral of his patron's friends, giving them broad hints at the ſame time, but under the ſeal of ſecreſy, that he was author of it. There is no way ſo effectual as this to ſpread any ſtory. One whiſpered it to another, till in a few days, the whole town was in the ſecret.

The hints, and illuſions which were every hour thrown out to the patron, on this occaſion, perplexed him not a little, as he knew not what they meant. A ſecret though in the poſſeſſion of ſo many could not poſſibly remain long ſuch to him. One of his acquaintances, provoked at the ſeeming affectation of his not underſtanding his hints, told him the whole affair.

Much as he was ſurprized at the account, vanity would not let him ſuppreſs it by a direct negative, as the book was mentioned in terms of the higheſt praiſe. He anſwered with the coy evaſions of modeſty, the moſt effectual affirmation, and ſhifted off any farther diſcuſſion of the ſubject, till he ſhould be better informed.

Accordingly the moment his friend left him, he ſent for the author of the report, and charging him with it, deſired to ſee the performance which he had done him the honour to father upon him.

The paraſite, who took his cue from the looks of his patron, was far from denying the charge. He preſented him the book without heſitation, ſaying with his uſual bluntneſs, that if it was not actually written

by

by him, it was literally written from him, being nothing but what he had frequently ſaid on thoſe ſubjects; and therefore might without any injuſtice be aſſerted to be his

The advantageous manner in which the patron had heard the book ſpoken of, prevented his making any reply till he ſhould have read it, when he was ſo ſtruck with the various beauties of it, that vanity ſubdued all his virtue, and deprived him of the power of denying it. 'If the ſentiments are mine!' (ſaid he, bluſhing at his own baſeneſs, as he ſpoke) 'I am obliged to 'you for placing them in ſo advantageous a light; and 'think I ought to decline ſharing in an honour, ſo 'much of which belongs to another.

Such a repulſe was no way diſcouraging. The paraſite repeated his aſſertion that the whole was genuinely his, both in words and ſentiments, as indeed he knew not any other, whoſe they could be; and inſiſting, that he had no more merit in the affair, than barely that of writing them down, a liberty for which he begged pardon, and appealed to his former conduct to acquit him of ſo mean a piece of flattery, as giving to another the honour of a work which had not its equal.

It is not difficult to perſuade a willing mind. The patron could no longer deny what was ſo clearly proved; and what his own conſcience bore teſtimony to, againſt his falſe modeſty. All that remained was to act in ſuch a manner, that his practice ſhould not contradict this declaration of his principles; and ſo raiſe a doubt of their authenticity.

But after having made the firſt ſtep, he found no difficulty in this. He directly changed the whole tenor of his life. He laughed at morality, ridiculed Religion; and profeſſed vices he was unable to practiſe: And laſtly to compleat his character procured admiſſion into this ſociety, which, as I ſaid, was the proof of every polite accompliſhment and qualification; where he nods, as you ſee, over the grave, as inſenſible to the mirth, and pleaſures, enjoyed by his companions, as of the deſpicableneſs and danger of his own ſituation.

As

As for his parasite, his end was gained. From that moment he commanded him as he pleased, sharing in the enjoyment of his fortune while he lived; and sure of such a portion of it, if he survived him, as should sufficiently supply his appetites, the only use for which he desired a fortune.

THE END OF THE THIRD VOLUME.

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

Wherein are exhibited

VIEWS of ſeveral ſtriking Scenes, with curious and intereſting ANECDOTES, of the moſt noted Perſons in every Rank of Life, whoſe Hands it paſſed through, in AMERICA, ENGLAND, HOLLAND, GERMANY, and PORTUGAL.

——— Hold the Mirror up to Nature,
To ſhew Vice its own Image, Virtue his own Likeneſs,
And the very Age and Body of the Times
His Form and Preſſure. SHAKESPEAR.

Qui capit, ille facit.

By *an* ADEPT.

The THIRD EDITION, greatly enlarged and corrected.

In FOUR VOLUMES.

VOL. IV.

LONDON:

Printed for JOHN HILL in the *Strand.*

M,DCC,LXVII.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
1901

CONTENTS

OF VOLUME THE FOURTH.

BOOK THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL *continues the account of the members. The hiſtory of a remarkable perſon is given for a remarkable purpoſe. His pleaſures bring him into diſtreſs, from which he extricates himſelf by making them ſubſervient to his intereſt, and gets into a good* KEEPING. *Not content with the mother, he caſts his eye upon the daughter alſo, but is diſappointed, and forced to take up with a ſhare of her fortune, for procuring her in marriage for another. He reſolves to be a* GREAT MAN; *and for that purpoſe breaks with his* KEEPER, *when he has got from her all ſhe had to give.* Page 1

CHAP. II.

Continued. He begins his ſcheme ſucceſsfully by ſtealing a marriage His late KEEPER *makes an artful demand of all the preſents ſhe had given him, which he anſwers as artfully. He advances in his ſcheme, by ſteps exactly in his character, and gets into favour with a great perſon.* CHRYSAL *makes ſome remarks on the origin of the affections of the human mind, and the different manner of breeding men, and horſes, with the conſequence.* 6

CHAP. III.

Continued. He practiſes a ſucceſsful method for gaining the confidence of his new Patron, which he turns to good account. Hiſtory of the lover who ſucceeded him in the good graces of his late KEEPER. *He ſtrives to prevent his taking advantage of his influence over*

her; and finding he fails in that, fools him into diſtreſs, which brings his life in his power. He ſlights many motives, which might have had weight with others, and takes advantage of the opportunity to get rid of him, and all farther trouble about him. He continues to dupe him, till the laſt moment when his eyes are opened, and all comes out. Page 9

CHAP. IV.

Continued. A view of his political character introduces a maxim not ſufficiently attended to. He fails in a great ſtroke, and makes ſo many wrong ones, that he is kicked out of power, and forced to be content with profit, which he purſues through thick and thin. An unhappy event gives him an opportunity of ſhewing his ingratitude to his late Patron, on the merit of which he riſes to higher power than ever, which he wiſely exerts behind the curtain, and leaves HIS TOOLS *to bear the blame. An account of the juſt fruits of ſo much ſucceſs concludes his ſtory.* 14

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL *leaves the convent. His maſter proceeds in character. He practiſes a new manner of courtſhip; and ſignalizes his talents for intrigue, by debauching the daughter of his friend. Her diſtreſs, when too late, gives him ſome ſlight qualms of conſcience; but he ſoon recovers, and goes on in his enterprize.* 18

CHAP. VI.

Continued. CHRYSAL'S *maſter makes his triumph publick, by ſeducing his new miſtreſs away from her father's houſe. The manner in which he impoſed upon them both to effect this; with the conſolation he gave her for ſome natural conſequence of his gallantry. His triumph is compleated by her going upon the town, and her father's breaking his heart.* 22

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

" CHRYSAL's *maſter pays his court to a great perſon,* " *who ſeems not much to reliſh his humour, and ex-* " *preſſes ſome unfaſhionable ſentiments concerning po-* " *lite pleaſures. In the courſe of a regular progreſ-* " *ſion* CHRYSAL *comes into the poſſeſſion of a Beau.*" *Hiſtory of a Beau, with a journal of his manner of life for one day.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, in a common way, for that of a* LADY OF FASHION.

Page 26

CHAP. VIII.

Hiſtory of CHRYSAL's *new miſtreſs. She is brought into diſtreſs by her beauty, from which a lucky interview relieves her. The danger of arguing in favour of inclination againſt reaſon. Her friend puts her to ſchool to learn manners, and afterwards marries her. His family ſhew impotent reſentment, at which he is ſo enraged that he makes his will, by which he leaves her his whole fortune; and then dies. An uncommon inſtance of the good nature of the world.* 31

CHAP. IX.

The common conſequence of over-doing things. Her huſband's relations find out a flaw in his will. The comfort of having good lawyers to keep up a client's ſpirits. For the advantage of having two ſtrings to her bow, ſhe enters into an engagement of marriage, under an heavy penalty. The event of her law-ſuit ſhews the prudence of this precaution. She is caſt; her lover flies off, and ſhe ſues him for the penalty of his engagement. He begs the money among his friends, and then by a nice fineſſe plays her own game back upon her, and flings her off with half. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* 36

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome out-of-the-way remarks on matrimony. Deſcription and hiſtory of his new maſter.* CHRYSAL *vindicates his uſing a common expreſſion.*

His maſter's firſt riſe from a beggar to a foot-boy. He gains his maſter's favour, of which he makes the uſe natural to be expected from his firſt education. Some account of a relation of his PRINCIPAL'S. *The danger of giving advice.* CHRYSAL'S *maſter inſinuates himſelf into the* COLONEL'S *liking and undermines his principal, in his regard.* Page 41

CHAP. XI.

Further account of the COLONEL. CHRYSAL'S *maſter, in conjunction with a female aſſociate proper for his purpoſe, compleats his ſcheme of alienating the* COLONEL'S *regard from his family, of which he gives a proof of a moſt extraordinary nature. A remarkable inſtance of* CHRYSAL'S *maſter's talents for a particular kind of wit, with a ſtriking account of the worthy manner in which he and his fair aſſociate acquitted themſelves of the truſt repoſed in them by the* COLONEL. 46

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL'S *maſter receives an account of the death of the colonel. He finds after much deliberation that he cannot fling his worthy aſſociate out of the whole ſtoil, and therefore prudently reſolves to ſhare it with her by a marriage, of which he draws a comfortable picture. He urges his ſuit, and ſhe ſtrives to evade it by arguments conſiſtent with both their characters. He carries his point, in a particular manner.* 50

CHAP. XIII.

Account of the methods, which CHRYSAL'S *maſter took to obviate the effects of his principal's reſentment, with the characteriſtick converſation that paſſed between them, on the former's avowing the Colonel's will.* CHRYSAL'S *maſter over-ſhoots his mark, and provokes his principal to do more than he ever intended. An uncommon inſtance of the juſtice of the world.* CHRYSAL'S *maſter obliges the lady to court him in her turn*

turn, and at length marries her. The conſequences of ſuch a marriage, and fruits of the ſucceſs of all their ſchemes. Page 54

CHAP. XIV.

CHRYSAL's *maſter deſigns to ſet up a coach; but wants a material article, toward making a proper figure with it. He conſults with an* HERALD, *who gives him an elaborate diſſertation not the moſt pleaſing to him, on* COATS OF ARMS, *and the modern methods of making them, in which he unfolds many curious myſteries, and undertakes at laſt, on proper encouragement, to make him a gentleman.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice. Converſation between his new maſter, and an* ANTIQUARIAN. *Curious arguments, by which he proves the genuineneſs and importance of certain relicks of antiquity.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.* 58

CHAP. XV.

A modeſt method of ſeeking fame. CHRYSAL's *maſter confirms himſelf in his reſolution to gratify an uncommon curioſity, by a great example The judicious and learned manner, in which he claſſed and entered his new acquiſitions. Curious remark on the value of books. He goes to an auction where he makes an extraordinary purchaſe.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, for that of the Auctioneer. Specimen and effects of his new maſter's eloquence, learning and judgment.* 66

CHAP. XVI.

An unſavoury accident ſtops him ſhort in his harangue. He turns off the jeſt, with another, and accounts learnedly for what has happened. The real cauſe, and conſequence of that accident. Reflections on auctioneering, and the cauſes of its ſucceſs. 71

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL's *maſter is viſited by a* CONNOISSEUR, *to whom he gives a ſhort receipt how to make his pictures ſell, and makes ſome ſtriking remarks on the diſregard people ſhew for their families, which ſend his viſiter away in a huff.* 74

CHAP. XIX.

Continued. The natural event of ſuch a ſituation. The general victorious over himſelf, quits the purſuit of military glory for the practice of the virtues of peace. Perfidy of the enemy juſtly puniſhed. The army is formed again under the command of a GERMAN, *and a ſugar-plum given to the* ENGLISH *to ſtop their mouths at ſuch an inſult.* Page 176

CHRYSAL:

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

VOLUME THE FOURTH.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL *continues the account of the members. The hiſtory of a remarkable perſon is given for a remarkable purpoſe. His pleaſures bring him into diſtreſs, from which he extricates himſelf by making them ſubſervient to his intereſt, and gets into a good* KEEPING. *Not content with the mother, he caſts his eyes upon the daughter alſo, but is diſappointed, and forced to take up with a ſhare of her fortune, for procuring her in marriage for another. He reſolves to be* A GREAT MAN; *and for that purpoſe breaks with his* KEEPER, *when he had got from her all ſhe had to give.*

ONE of the moſt ſpecious arguments alledged againſt the obligation to virtue, is the ſucceſs that is often obſerved to attend the violation of it,

in the general purſuits of the world. Of this you ſee the ſtrongeſt inſtance, which this age has afforded, in that man, who ſits at the left hand of the *ſuperior*, wrap'd up in the conſciouſneſs of his own importance, and ſmiling contemptuouſly at the company around him, while they believe he is joining in their mirth.

A particular account of his life would lead into too great a length. It would ſeem a ſatire on mankind, rather than a detail of the actions of one man. However, as a ſhort ſketch of it may be of advantage, by unveiling this myſtery in the conduct of heaven; and proving the inſufficiency of the higheſt proſperity to confer happineſs, even in the hour of attainment, when that proſperity is not founded in, and procured by virtue, I will juſt run over the great heads of his ſtory, with that brevity, which the diſagreeableneſs of the ſubject naturally dictates.

The opening of his life gave no proſpect of his preſent exalted ſtation. Pleaſure in every licentious exceſs ſoon diſſipated a ſmall patrimony; and he was hardly entered into man's eſtate, when want, of his own earning, began to ſtare him in the face.

The peculiar caſt of a man's mind is in nothing more ſtrongly ſhewn, than in the expedients he has recourſe to, in order to extricate him from difficulties. Inſtead of quitting the vices, which had brought him into this embarraſſment, he reſolved on the firſt alarm to build his hopes of fortune on them, by purſuing them in a different manner. Experienced in all the myſteries of intrigue, he knew that age and deformity will purchaſe pleaſures, for which youth and beauty expect to be flattered, if not even paid. Unreſtrained therefore by any ſcruples of honour or conſcience, he directly determined to fix upon ſome wealthy female of the former claſs, and never doubted making her paſſion repay him manifold, what he had expended on the gratification of his own.

I ſee the abhorrence with which the mention of ſuch a ſcheme ſtrikes you. Venal proſtitution in the female ſex, though cut off from every other method of pro-
ıging a wretched exiſtence, is the loweſt ſtate to
ich it can ſink. What then can be ſaid of a man,
who,

who, uncompelled by ſuch irreſiſtable neceſſity, voluntarily gives up the dignity of his nature, and hiring himſelf to be the ſlave of luſts, which are a diſgrace to it, contentedly eats the bread of infamy, and vice? Language yet wants a name for ſuch baſeneſs.

This hopeful ſcheme was no ſooner formed, than carried into execution. As his character gained him eaſy acceſs to all ſuch as were proper for his purpoſe, he immediately ſingled out an old dowager, in whoſe diſpoſal the dotage of a dying huſband had left the accumulated wealth of ſeveral ages of ſucceſsful induſtry. Such a quarry engaged all his attention in the purſuit. He paid his addreſſes to her, though deſtitute of every thing that could raiſe natural deſire, with ſo much aſſiduity and warmth, that ſhe readily received him into her good graces; and *in return for the pleaſure ſhe found in his converſation*, laviſhed her fortune upon him with a profuſion that even exceeded his hopes.

From the principle on which he ſet out, it may be judged that he did not neglect to improve ſuch an opportunity of repairing his broken fortunes, and laying up a fund for a future day, out of the overflowing of her untimely fondneſs. But unbounded as her generoſity was, he was far from being content, while any thing farther remained poſſible to be got from her. Beſide the great wealth, which was directly in her power, a very large eſtate was by family ſettlements to deſcend to an only daughter, whom ſhe had by her huſband. As ſoon therefore, as her modeſt lover had got poſſeſſion of the former, his heart yearned for the latter alſo, with as much greedineſs, as if his wants were only encreaſed by his acquiſitions.

But though he was ſeldom long at a loſs for means to accompliſh any thing he had in view, as he was under no reſtraint from principle in the choice of them, there was an obſtacle in his way here, which all the fertility of his genius could not ſurmount. This was his connection with the mother, the nature of which he well knew would never let her conſent to a ſcheme deſtructive of itſelf; for he had no fear of her making oppoſition from motives of honour or virtue to

any thing that did not clash with that, as he found none in his own conscience even to this, though contrary to the first principles of nature.

Since he could not therefore get the daughter's whole fortune, by marrying her, he resolved to exert his influence on her mother to give her to some person of his chusing, who should divide it with him, as a recompence for making the match. For this purpose, he pitched upon a near relation of his own, who readily gave into his scheme, though possessed himself of a fortune that placed him above the necessity of stooping to such meanness. The consent of the guardian mother, as he foresaw, was easily obtained. She was happy in having such an opportunity of proving her regard for him, as well as of removing her daughter out of his reach, his attention to whom, while his first project was in his head, had not escaped her jealous notice.

His share of this prize, added to his other gains, made him now a man of considerable fortune, and fired him with an ambition of making a figure in the state. To accomplish this, the natural turn of his mind suggested it to him, to marry into some family, the interest and splendour of which might drown the obscurity of his own original, and assist his hopes. Nor did he apprehend any opposition to this scheme, from the same quarter, that had defeated the former. He had now gotten from her, all that she had to give; and the same principle which prompted him to be the hired drudge of her loose desires, made him find no scruple to leave her service, when she was no longer able to pay the wages of it.

Nothing is easier, than to make matter for dispute. On her expressing her resentment, with the haughtiness which she thought the circumstances of the connection between them gave her a right to assume, as she had on many occasions before, at something he had done with design to provoke her, his *sensibility* took fire, and in just indignation at treatment so improper for *a man of honour* to submit to, he bound himself the most dreadful imprecations to shake off so intolerable

tolerable a yoke for ever, and ſo flung out of her preſence.

Her ſurprize at a behaviour, ſo different from what he had ever ſhewn before, ſuſpended her reſentment, and ſhe waited with impatience for a repetition of the blandiſhments with which he had been accuſtomed to ſooth her anger. But what was her aſtoniſhment to find, that inſtead of making any advances of the kind, he had actually withdrawn himſelf from her houſe. This alarmed her. In the arrogance of her former ſuperiority, the loſs of which ſhe was not yet ſenſible of, ſhe ſent him a peremptory ſummons, to attend her directly. But her commands had now loſt their weight, and ſhe received a refuſal, the more cutting for being couched in cool, equivocal politeneſs. This drew on him an epiſtolary torrent of upbraidings, expoſtulations, and at laſt, of the moſt tender intreaties; but all were equally ineffectual. He pleaded his raſh vow, lamented the cruel obligation of it; and as ſhe began to be ſoftened by this addreſs, hinted at a ſenſe of religion, and even diſtantly recommended it to her, as the beſt conſolation under the croſſes, and afflictions of life.

Such ſentiments from him could mean nothing but ſneering inſult. In that light ſhe took them. However, as the nature of the affair made it improper for her to open her mind too explicitly, ſhe reſolved to play his own game back upon him, and affect to be convinced by arguments, of which ſhe hoped to take advantage, at a proper time, though in a manner very different from his intention, in applying them.

CHAP. II.

Continued. He begins his ſcheme ſucceſsfully by ſtealing a marriage. His late KEEPER *makes an artful demand of all the preſents ſhe had given him, which he anſwers as artfully. He advances in his ſcheme, by ſteps exactly in his character, and gets into favour with a great perſon.* CHRYSAL *makes ſome remarks on the origin of the affections of the human mind, and the different manner of breeding men, and horſes, with the conſequence.*

WHILE ſhe was pleaſing herſelf with this thought, he had carried the moſt difficult part of his ſcheme into execution. The paſſion for play, which marks the character of the preſent age, though it really counteracts every ſocial virtue, is yet the means of aſſociating all kinds and ranks of people, who have, or even appear to have, money to play for. At meetings for this purpoſe, he had found means to make an acquaintance with a nobleman, who was ſo pleaſed with his converſation, ſtudied deſignedly to pleaſe him, that he admitted him to an intimacy in his family, which he knew ſo well how to improve with one of his daughters, that in deſpite of the diſparity of age and rank, he ſoon prevailed upon her to crown his hopes by a private marriage, as the conſent of her family could not be expected.

As the immediate fortune of the lady could not be thought an object of mercenary purſuit, when the firſt emotions of reſentment gave place to reflection, his plea of paſſion was admitted as an excuſe, for this violation of the ſacred laws of hoſpitality; and his wife's father unknowingly compleated his deſign, by exerting all his intereſt, which was very great, to advance him in the ſtate.

The ſecreſy, with which it had been neceſſary for him to conduct this affair, and the rapidity of his ſucceſs,

ceſs, prevented his late miſtreſs from making any attempt to defeat it. As ſoon however as ſhe recovered from the firſt ſtroke of her aſtoniſhment, at the news of his marriage, ſhe proceeded to put her ſcheme in execution. Accordingly ſhe ſent him compliments of congratulation on this happy fruit of his converſion, exhorting him to perſevere in it; and profeſſed her reſolution to imitate his example; and dedicate the remainder of her days to the duties of virtue and religion, as a proof of which ſhe propoſed to begin by reſtoring to her injured daughter, as much as poſſible of the fortune, which the confidence of her huſband had left in her power, and ſhe had unhappily laviſhed in purſuits, to the criminal nature of which he had opened her eyes.

As all that was not diſſipated beyond recovery was what ſhe had given to him, and her reſtoring it therefore, muſt depend on his making a reſtitution to her firſt, he was not a moment at a loſs for the drift of this extraordinary inſtance of penitence, nor how to treat the account of it. He immediately returned her an anſwer, congratulating her in his turn, with ſincerity equal to her own, on her pious reſolutions, the intention of which, he ſaid, would make amends for the impoſſibility of carrying them into execution, any farther than by ſtinting herſelf to the indiſpenſible neceſſaries of life, and laying up the reſt of her large income to ſupply the place of the ſums ſhe had expended.

Such an anſwer neceſſarily drew on an explanation, and of courſe a demand of the ſeveral preſents ſhe had made him in the courſe of their dalliance, and knew he had laid up, as he lived at her expence all the time. This was no more than he expected. He replied therefore, without being in the leaſt diſconcerted, that he looked upon every thing he had received from her not as preſents, but payment for the time he had devoted to attending upon her; and for that reaſon thought it inconſiſtent with that regard for juſtice, which is inſeparable from true piety, for her to demand ſuch a reſtitution, eſpecially as ſhe muſt be ſenſible that he could not now make it, without doing

wrong to his wife, who had an undoubted property in every thing that belonged to him; and concluded with deſiring that a correſpondence which might be miſunderſtood, and ſo diſturb his connubial happineſs, might be dropped between them.

This ſufficiently explained the motives of his conduct; and the deſpicable ſituation, which ſhe had brought herſelf to. However ſhe was obliged to acquieſce with the beſt grace ſhe could, without even the poor ſatisfaction of revenge; for he had taken care to inſert in every paragraph of his letters, ſuch anecdotes of the connection that had been between them, that it was impoſſible for her to ſhew them in order to expoſe him, without expoſing herſelf at the ſame time to the contempt and deteſtation of the world. From this time therefore all intercourſe beyond that of common civility was broken off between them; tho' ſome conſequences of their former connection which happened even after her death, make one of the moſt ſtriking parts of his ſtory, as ſhall be obſerved in the proper place.

The firſt eſſays of a man's diſpoſition indicate the rule by which his whole life will be conducted. The intereſt of the family into which he had thus ſtolen, had no ſooner raiſed him to ſome degree of power, than he aſpired to the higheſt, to attain which he reſolved to purſue a method exactly in his character. This was to ingratiate himſelf, he regarded not by what means, with one of the firſt Perſonages in the ſtate, whoſe intereſt he meant to make uſe of, as long as it could ſerve him, and then fly in his face to ſhew his independence. Nature had never endowed a man with qualifications fitter for ſuch a purpoſe. He was every thing, to every man. The gay were ſtruck with his wit; the grave with his ſolidity; while an appearance of candor and ſincerity, that lulled ſuſpicion to ſleep, won the confidence of all with whom he converſed; all which powers of pleaſing were by a ſervility of diſpoſition derived perhaps from a ſervile birth, proſtituted to the humour of thoſe whom he deſired to pleaſe, however contrary to his own.

I ſee

I ſee your curioſity at my ſaying, that *the ſervility of his diſpoſition might perhaps be derived from a ſervile birth.* You want to have the origin of the affections of the human ſoul explained, whether they are imprinted on it, as its firſt emanation, from the ſource of all exiſtence, or received by traduction from the immediate parents of the body, or only cauſed by the caſual operation of external objects. But this, as I have ſaid in other caſes, is a difficulty that I am not at liberty to ſolve, as the queſtion is not yet determined by the learned; though much ingenious reaſoning has been diſplayed on every ſide of it. This only I ſhall ſay, that the practice of mankind ſeems to contradict the ſecond of theſe opinions, who ſhew no regard to the diſpoſitions of thoſe, on whom they propagate their own ſpecies, though they trace back the pedigree of a dog, or an horſe, for many generations, for fear of any fault in the breed; the reaſon, you may perhaps imagine, why the *brutes bred with ſuch care, are found ſo much ſeldomer, to degenerate, than the offspring of the greateſt men.*

CHAP. III.

Continued. He practiſes a ſucceſsful method for gaining the confidence of his new Patron, which he turns to good account. Hiſtory of the lover who ſucceeded him in the good graces of his late KEEPER. *He ſtrives to prevent his taking advantage of his influence over her; and finding he fails in that, fools him into diſtreſs, which brings his life in his power. He ſlights many motives, which might have had weight with others, and takes advantage of the opportunity to get rid of him, and all farther trouble about him. He continues to dupe him, till the laſt moment when his eyes are opened, and all comes out.*

AS ſoon as he had inſinuated himſelf into the pleaſurable liking of his deſigned Patron, by an unwearied exertion of all his powers of pleaſing, he

directly proceeded with the niceſt art, to improve that liking into an important confidence He watched his every action, word, and look, till he diſcovered the peculiar turn of his mind, to which he accommodated his own ſo implicitly, that the very faculties of his ſoul ſeemed to move only by the other's will.

They who are above deceit themſelves, ſuſpect it not in others. That ſelf-love, which is inſeparable from humanity, was eaſily impoſed upon by ſuch art. His Patron liked himſelf in him; and inſenſibly came to think all reſerve unneceſſary with one whoſe ſoul appeared to be only the ſhadow of his own. This ſoon gave him real conſequence, as the numbers, whom intereſt or inclination attached to his Patron, found it neceſſary to take the lead from him; and enabled him to graſp at every opportunity of engroſſing power, and acquiring wealth, to ſupply thoſe pleaſures, which he had quitted only from neceſſity and returned to again, the moment he had the means of obtaining them.

But all this torrent of ſucceſs was not able to divert his attention for a moment from the ſmalleſt matter in which his avarice was concerned; as he gave the ſtrongeſt proof in the following affair, to explain which I muſt look back to the woman, whoſe laviſh fondneſs firſt raiſed his fortune, as it happened in conſequence of his connection with her, though ſome conſiderable time after her death.

It is obſerved that habitual indulgence continues the paſſions proper to youth, after the fire that firſt ſupplied them is exhauſted, and the end for which they were implanted by nature become impoſſible.

Old as this woman was, when our hero deſerted her, and to appearance as incapable of feeling, as raiſing deſire, ſhe had ſo long accuſtomed herſelf to the gratification of every ſenſual appetite, that ſhe could not bear to live without a lover. The difficulty was, how to fix upon a proper object: for as intereſt was her only attraction, the firſt advances muſt neceſſarily come from her; and then her prodigality to her laſt had put it out of her power to make it worth the

the while of such another as she might like to supply his place. Precluded thus from much delicacy in her choice, necessity directed her to one of her own domesticks, something in whose circumstances pointed him out more particularly to her notice.

There is not a more despicable instance of vanity, than being ashamed of the connections of nature, because of poverty, when that poverty is not the effect of vice. A far distant female relation had from this vanity bequeathed to her a very considerable fortune, to which this man should have been heir, had not the lowness of his condition, a motive sufficient to have influenced a generous heart in his favour, made her think it would be a disgrace to her to be succeeded by him; for which reason she wantonly deprived him of the inheritance of his ancestors, to give it to one, who did not want it. Dispirited by such unnatural injustice, for which the Law afforded no redress, he was no longer able to pursue the industry, that had hitherto been his support; and sunk into such distress, that his despair made him at length throw himself at the feet of her, who enjoyed his spoils, to beg relief.

This happened critically at the time when her inclinations for a new lover began to get the better of her grief for the loss of the last. Softened by what she had herself so lately felt, she pitied his distress; and as all the tender passions are allied, that pity was soon warmed into such love, as she was capable of feeling. Accordingly, as she had taken him into her family, on his first application, she now entrusted him with the management of her affairs, to give colour for the further intimacy she had in view. The consequence was natural. He readily took hints, too plain to be over-looked; and she kept up *his assiduity in her service*, by some presents in hand, and grants of more, charged most of them indeed on the inheritance of his ancestors, which she had settled upon his predecessor in her favour after her death, till when they were not to take place or be discovered, to avoid his reproaches, as well as those of her daughter and her husband for such a repetition of her former follies; and because she did not chuse to straighten her own circumstances,

by

by the immediate payment of them. But theſe wages of vice, however welcome in his preſent indigence, proved fatal to him in the end.

The hero of my tale, who ſaw the riſe of this new favourite, and knew from experience on what it muſt be founded, though ſhe affected to attribute her notice of him to gratitude to his relation, and retributory juſtice to himſelf, gave him a genteel and profitable employment under one of the many which he himſelf enjoyed in the ſtate, profeſſedly in compliment to her, but really to attach him to his own intereſt, and prevent his exerting his influence on her to obtain ſuch grants as before-mentioned; for the turn of his own mind made him ſuſpect every thing that was poſſible; and ſuch is the partiality of man to himſelf, that he who has been ungrateful to all mankind, will yet expect gratitude from others.

Proud of this preferment, which raiſed his rank in life, and depending on the profeſſions of friendſhip, and promiſes which his new friend liberally made him, he thought proper at her death not only not to claim her grants for the preſent, to avoid breaking with him as he knew muſt be the conſequence, but alſo to give up to him a particular gift, part of his own alienated inheritance, which he had received publickly from her, *as a reward for his ſervices*, and truſt to his honour for an equivalent return. But that return when at length, it was made, was as far from being equivalent, as his promiſes were from performances; nothing being more contrary to his intentions, than to enable him to ſupport his claims to thoſe grants, of which he had gotten notice, and judged from his own heart the reaſon of their being concealed. He continued therefore to feed him with promiſes, which led his vanity into expence, and encouraged him to embark in ſchemes that [illegible] had not a fund to execute, till he fell into diſtreſſes, to extricate himſelf from which he had recourſe to means, that laid his life at the mercy of this his ſuppoſed friend.

There are ſome crimes, the conſequences of which are ſo dangerous, that no puniſhment can be too ſevere to deter from them. One of the worſt of theſe

is

is imitating a man's *ſignature*, with a deſign to deceive. It perpetuates the violation of truth, undermines the ſecurity of innocence, and breaks that confidence which is indiſpenſibly neceſſary to carry on the concerns of life. But, though no circumſtances can, in a legal ſenſe, extenuate the heinouſneſs of this crime, there were ſome in this particular inſtance, which would have deterred any other man from the proſecution of it: it had been committed not with an intention of doing injuſtice to him, or any other, but to remedy for a time his injuſtice by raiſing apparently the value of the return he had made for the gift of their common benefactreſs, as I have before obſerved, nearer to an equality with it, in order to procure preſent relief from diſtreſs, of which he had been, in ſo many ſenſes, the cauſe.

But all theſe conſiderations were of no weight with him, when put in competition with the conveniency of getting rid of one whom he doubly hated, for being privy to his iniquities, and interfering with his intereſt. He heſitated not a moment therefore to make uſe of an opportunity, offered beyond his hopes, and ſacrifice him, under the ſpecious appearance of paying obedience to the laws.

In this it was neceſſary for him to act with the deepeſt diſſimulation to accompliſh his deſign, in its full extent. But this was no difficulty to him. He profeſſed pity for his misfortunes; and, while he corrupted all, in whom the wretch placed confidence, to betray him, managed ſo as to ſeem to be compelled by law to appear againſt him, though he might with the greateſt eaſe have avoided it, and buried the whole in ſilence. Nor did he ſtop here! his malice ſeemed to purſue him even beyond the grave; for inſtead of permitting him to prepare in peace for the approach of fate, he buoyed him up with hopes of a pardon, to earn which the deluded victim ſubſcribed to every thing dictated to him to blacken his own character, and make void the grants, which he had purchaſed at ſo dear a rate; and in this infatuation he was kept to the laſt moment, to prevent his recanting; for which purpoſe, his neareſt friends, and all

all who might have undeceived him, and adminiſtered comfort to his diſtreſs in the hour of anguiſh, were barred admittance to him.

But his eyes were opened on the verge of life, and in that awful moment when truth only is ſpoken, he revoked every thing he had been thus drawn in to ſay, and aſſerted the validity of the claims, which were the cauſe of his ruin, ſo that the whole ſcheme, laboured with ſuch deep damnation to deceive the world, was defeated.

I ſee the horror with which you are affected at ſuch a ſcene; and ſhall therefore cloſe it with obſerving, that though he was permitted to perpetrate his crimes, divine juſtice prevented his reaping the fruits he propoſed from them; as, beſide the immediate price of his blood, it coſt him more, than he earned by this complicated guilt, to ſtop the cries of the widow, and orphan, and bribe venal defamation to ſilence, when it was too late, and the myſtery of his wickedneſs was made known to the world.

CHAP. IV.

Continued. A view of his political character introduces a maxim not ſufficiently attended to. He fails in a great ſtroke, and makes ſo many wrong ones, that he is kicked out of power, and forced to be content with profit, which he purſues through thick and thin. An unhappy event gives him an opportunity of ſhewing his ingratitude to his late Patron, on the merit of which he riſes to higher power than ever, which he wiſely exerts behind the curtain, and leaves HIS TOOLS *to bear the blame. An account of the juſt fruits of ſo much ſucceſs concludes his ſtory.*

YOU have hitherto ſeen him only in private life: I'll now give you a glimpſe of his political character, which will convince you of a truth, for obvious reaſons not ſufficiently attended to, which is, that

that the ruling principles of the heart influence the actions in all capacities; and therefore that *it is impoſſible for a bad man to be a good miniſter.*

The power to which the confidence of his Patron raiſed him, was ſuch as might have enabled him to effect either much good, or evil, had he known how to have uſed it to the beſt advantage. But his eagerneſs in the purſuit of his own views put him off his uſual guard, and diſcovered his principles before it was too late to oppoſe them.

The moſt exalted minds are not exempted from human weakneſſes. That of his Patron was a thirſt of power, though without a thought of uſing it, in any improper manner. Some late ſervices, of the higheſt importance, which he had performed to the ſtate, ſuggeſted to our hero a ſcheme for rivetting his intereſt with him ſtill ſtronger, by procuring him a power which he knew would center really in himſelf. Accordingly he exerted all his abilities and influence to wreſt from the Sovereign an eſſential part of the incommunicable power of the crown, and veſt it in him.

Such an attempt inſtantly gave the alarm to every real friend, not only of the government, but alſo of him, in whoſe favour it was profeſſed to be made; who, though they harboured no fear of him, did not dare to offer ſuch an affront to their Sovereign, and give a wound to the political conſtitution of their country which might be of moſt dangerous conſequence in leſs ſafe hands. The deſign therefore was defeated; and inſtead of ſerving his Patron, only inſtilled doubts of him into thoſe, who were not acquainted with the uprightneſs of his heart.

Though the intereſt of his Patron continued to ſupport him for a conſiderable time after this, his whole conduct was ſuch a ſeries of blunders, (many of them ſo groſs, that it was doing violence to probability to impute them to ignorance) that at length *the voice of the people was raiſed againſt him*, and he was obliged to give up all pretenſions to power, and ſit down with an employment of great, but mere profit, which all

all his own ſolicitations, though urged with the abject importunity of a common beggar, even to ſhedding tears, and imploring compaſſion for his wife and family, all he had hitherto acquired having been ſquandered as faſt as it came, on his pleaſures, would not have procured for him, had not his Patron ſanguinely eſpouſed his intereſt, even to the injury of his own, though on a diſcovery of his principles and private character, now too notorious to be concealed, he rejected him from his eſteem, and refuſed to give any farther countenance to his ambition.

From this time he applied every power of his ſoul to amaſs wealth, which he had too many opportunities of doing in his preſent employment, the moſt iniquitous of which he never failed to improve to ſtill greater iniquity, regardleſs of public reproach; and the diſtreſs of myriads, ſuffering under his injuſtice, whoſe cries and imprecations aſcended hourly to heaven againſt him.

Riches give conſequence, eſpecially with thoſe who ſacrifice every thing to luxury. Though he had no public power, his perſonal influence over individuals in a ſhort time became greater than ever, as he too ſoon had an opportunity of proving.

One of thoſe events, which ſhew the vanity of all human deſigns, however wiſely conducted and glorious in their end, threw the government into other hands. New men always adopt new meaſures, if only from an affectation of appearing wiſer than their predeceſſors. In this change his late Patron loſt all influence, except that which *virtue eſtabliſhes in the hearts of the virtuous*. This was an opportunity for ſhaking off the weight of obligation not to be miſſed by one of our Hero's turn. He not only deſerted him directly in the baſeſt manner, but alſo to ingratiate himſelf with the preſent powers, fathered upon him the fictions of his own brain under the appearance of betraying his ſecrets, and made a merit of aggravating his ingratitude and perfidy by open inſults, in hope of provoking him to ſome unguarded act or expreſſion of reſentment, which might give advantage againſt him, *by the common trick of applying to the maſter what is meant*

meant to the ſervant. But for once all his art failed. Confident in conſcious innocence and merit, he diſdained to give weight to ſuch baſe machinations by taking notice of them; and receiving this ingratitude as a puniſhment for having placed his eſteem ſo unworthily, looked down upon him with indignant contempt, nor was ever heard to honour his name with utterance.

Such a proof of his ſincerity gained our Hero the confidence of his new friends, to whoſe tottering power his perſonal intereſt was found a neceſſary ſupport. But he lent not that ſupport but on his own terms. Cooled by experience, he had learned that the name of power is always purſued by envy and ambition. He therefore wiſely gratified the vanity of others with the dangerous ſhadow, while he reſerved the ſubſtance to himſelf, dictating in ſafety, becauſe in ſecret, all the meaſures for any miſtake in which they were anſwerable.

In this ſituation you ſee him now. But ſuch a ſeries of ſucceſs has been far from procuring him the happineſs propoſed in the purſuit. Recollection of the means imbitters the end. The ingratitude and perfidy of one, whom he had placed his whole confidence in, and bound to him by the higheſt obligations, upbraid him continually with his own baſeneſs to his Patron, and make him afraid to place truſt in any other; ſo that he lives in a ſtate of conſtant ſuſpicion and dread of all mankind, deſtitute of that friendly confidence, which is the cement of ſociety, the comfort and ſupport of life.

Nor is this the only wound that rankles in his breaſt! the unhappy victim of his avarice, murdered under the formalities of law, is never abſent from his thoughts a moment. Conjured up by conſcience, his ſpectre haunts his dreams. He *ſees* him *in the dark.* He *hears* him *in the deepeſt ſilence.* Nor can the loud laugh of mirth and riot drown his louder voice in the midſt of company. Hence that gloom which you ſee hang upon his brow! that conſciouſneſs of guilt, which gives a caſt of horror to his very ſmiles.

Conſider

Conſider now the ſtory of this man; and own with reverence and awe that *vice never wants an avenger*; that *wickedneſs is its own puniſhment*. Who would not rather be the apparent wretch, that wanders homeleſs through the world, fed by the cold hand of common charity, than he with all his honours, power and wealth?

The characters of the reſt, except him who had been my maſter's competitor for admiſſion into the ſuperior order of the ſociety, are not diſtinguiſhed by any thing to make them worth diſplaying; I ſhall therefore leave them in the obſcurity they deſerve; as I ſhall reſerve his for another place, where ſome new occurrences will ſhew it in a ſtronger light.

CHAP. V.

Chrysal leaves the convent. His maſter proceeds in character. He practiſes a new manner of courtſhip; and ſignalizes his talents for intrigue, by debauching the daughter of his friend. Her diſtreſs, when too late, gives him ſome ſlight qualms of conſcience; but he ſoon recovers, and goes on in his enterprize.

IT was my fortune to leave this place, in the poſſeſſion of the ſame perſon, who had brought me to it. The moment the meeting broke up, he flew to reduce into practice ſome part of the theory, which had been ſo well diſcuſſed among them A perſon of diſtinguiſhed learning and virtue, who had taken great pains though to little purpoſe, with ſome part of the education of his youth, had obſerved of late, that he ſeemed to pay him particular reſpect, and was more frequent than uſual in his viſits at his houſe, where he behaved with a moral decency, very different from his general character.

The good man ſaw this with real pleaſure, and attributing it to the influence of his own converſation, as vanity will find its way into the beſt hearts, gave him all

all the encouragement he could to come, in hope of working a thorough reformation in him. But he was deceived in that hope; and found, when too late, that he had cherifhed a viper in his boſom, to ſting his heart.

Euſebius (that was this perſon's name) had an only daughter, on whoſe education he had exerted the tendereſt care. She was now in that dangerous time of life, when ripened youth has given all the paſſions their full force, and reaſon not yet acquired ſtrength to rule them. This danger though ſeemed leſs threatening to her, than it is to moſt of the ſex, nature, which had been moſt liberal to her mind, having denied thoſe charms of face which too often prove a ſnare to the poſſeſſor; and the precepts of her father trained her in ſuch principles of wiſdom, and virtue, as ſeemed a ſufficient guard.

Such circumſtances, excluſive of the obligations of honour not to infringe the laws of hoſpitality, (I add not virtue, for that has long loſt all obligation in matters of this kind) would have prevented any other man from thinking of attempting her; but the pleaſure of ſeducing innocence ſupplied every defect of beauty; and the difficulty of ſuch a conqueſt doubled his ardour in the purſuit; as the triumph would eſtabliſh the fame of his gallantry, which had never yet aſpired beyond a ſervant wench; beſide that the age and profeſſion of her father ſecured him from the danger of perſonal reſentment. Encouraged by all theſe equally powerful motives, the moment he ſaw her, he marked her out for the proof of his talents for intrigue; how to begin his attack though, ſo as to elude her father's vigilance, without alarming her virtue, was the queſtion.

But he was not long at a loſs. Difficulties, which appear unſurmountable to wiſdom, are eaſily conquered by cunning (and with this he was plentifully ſtored) becauſe it will make uſe of means, which the other holds in abhorrence. In purſuance therefore of a plan, which he ſoon formed, he cultivated the acquaintance of *Euſebius* with the greateſt aſſiduity,

and

and in all his viſits to his houſe, turned his converſation entirely upon points of ſpeculative knowledge, in which he profeſſed the moſt earneſt deſire of information. *Euſebius* took the bait. As theſe were the uſual topicks of diſcourſe between him and his daughter, he was pleaſed at her being preſent, whenever my maſter was with him, both for her information, and to give her an opportunity of diſplaying the advantages ſhe had received from his care; for which purpoſe he often led her and my maſter into arguments, to which he liſtened with the higheſt delight, as ſhe always had the better in them. Nor was ſhe leſs pleaſed on ſuch occaſions, than her father. The modeſt deference, which my maſter conſtantly paid to her judgment, was ſo flattering to her conſciouſneſs of ſuperiority, that ſhe ſoon became fond of his company; at the ſame time, that the artfulneſs of his addreſs to her, for he never ſhewed any other notice of her ſex, than by a moſt guarded delicacy in his expreſſions, deceived the watchful care of *Euſebius* ſo effectually, that he never ſcrupled to leave his two pupils (as he fondly affected to call them) alone together, when any buſineſs demanded his attendance elſe-where.

As this was what my maſter had all along aimed at, it may be ſuppoſed he did not neglect to improve opportunities ſo favourable to his wiſhes. He always turned his converſation directly to ſuch ſubjects, as were moſt likely to inflame the paſſions, on the gratification of which he expatiated with a particular warmth and luxuriancy of imagination, but in terms ſo well wrapped up, as to conceal the poiſon they conveyed. The effect ſoon anſwered his deſign. Subjects, propoſed merely as points of ſpeculation, gave her no alarm. And when ſuch thoughts are once ſuggeſted, nature will lead them to her own ends. Her paſſions had been ſmothered, not extinguiſhed; and were the readier to take fire, for ſuch reſtraint. She heard him, therefore, with pleaſure, and ſlid inſenſibly into danger, the direct mention of which would have ſtruck her with horror.

Matters

Matters were in this critical ſituation, when he returned from *the ſociety*. The moment he alighted, he flew to the houſe of *Euſebius*, who unhappily was not at home. The converſation ſoon fell into its late courſe. There are ſome moments, in which nature will bear down all oppoſition. Though ſhe had indulged herſelf in talking on ſuch ſubjects, ſhe meant nothing more. But he was too well verſed in the practice to let her ſtop at the theory; and one unguarded minute murdered the peace of her future life, and blaſted the fruits of all her father's care.

It is impoſſible to deſcribe what ſhe felt, when paſſion gave place to reaſon, and ſhe became ſenſible of what had paſſed. Even he, hacknied as he was in the ways of wickedneſs, could not ſtand it. He left her precipitately, and for the firſt time felt ſomething like remorſe. But theſe qualms laſted not long. His deſires were rather raiſed than ſatisfied; beſide that to have ſtopped here, without making his ſucceſs publick, would have diſappointed perhaps the principal pleaſure he had in view. He reſolved therefore to ſeduce her from her father's houſe, that all the world might be witneſſes of his triumph.

For this purpoſe he went to her the next morning, at a time when he knew *Euſebius* was uſually engaged abroad. On enquiring for her, he was anſwered that ſhe was not well; and was turning about to go away, when her maid, who from her own experience had ſuſpected ſomething of the cauſe of her miſtreſs's illneſs, officiouſly ran to him, and told him ſhe was in her dreſſing-room.

CHAP.

To this *Euſebius* readily aſſented; and my maſter putting his hand under his arm, led him away, proud of ſuch familiarity with a perſon of his rank, as unſuſpecting as a victim to the altar. As ſoon as he got home, he gave the neceſſary inſtructions to his *truſty Valet de Chambre*, and then returning to *Euſebius*, amuſed him with imaginary ſchemes of reformation and œconomy in his family, and improvements in his houſe, till the return of his emiſſary let him know all was over. He then diſmiſſed *Euſebius* with a ſmile of triumph, who went home, happy in his mind at the prudence and virtue of his converſation, the effect as he fondly imagined of his own care and example; the laſt time his mind ever knew happineſs.

The moment he was gone, my maſter haſted after the deluded fugitive, whom he overtook juſt as ſhe alighted at his houſe, the ſervants of which were too well accuſtomed to ſuch things, to be ſurprized at the ſight of a new face. The manner of their meeting may be eaſily conceived. On his ſide all was joy, and triumph; on her's guilty confuſion, ſhame, and fear. However, repetition, though the higheſt aggravation of a crime, is yet leſs terrifying than the firſt commiſſion; beſide ſhe had now gone too far, to ſtop at any thing.

Three days he ſtaid with her, every moment of which was embittered to her, by reflection, and ſeemed tedious to him from ſatiety and impatience to make his triumph known; and then left her on a pretence of buſineſs, with vows of immediate return, and going back to *London*, repaired directly to the tavern, where he had by letter appointed to meet all his aſſociates, to whom he related the whole affair in ſuch terms of exultation, as raiſed their envy, not ſo much at his poſſeſſion of her, as the glory of ſuch a triumph.

I ſee your anxiety to know the fate of the unhappy *Euſebius*, and his more unhappy daughter. Though I ſaw them no more myſelf, I had too many opportunities of hearing their ſtory, the ſum of which is this. *Euſebius*, on his return home from my maſter, found a note from his daughter, bidding him farewel for ever, and deſiring he would not take the trouble of making

making any enquiry after her, as ſhe was unworthy of his care. The diſtraction evident in the ſtyle, and purport of this note, too plainly ſhewed her ruin. This was an attack his heart was not proof againſt. He ſunk down inſtantly in a ſwoon, in which he eſcaped ſome hours of miſery, before he recovered his ſenſes.

The firſt exertion of his reaſon was to make enquiry after his daughter, but no one could give him any information, her maid who conducted having accompanied her flight. He then flew to his friend, my maſter, for counſel and aſſiſtance; for the goodneſs of his own heart would neither let him ſuſpect him, nor deſert her in the ruin, into which ſhe had fallen; but he was told at his houſe, that a certain nobleman of his acquaintance had called upon him, the moment he left him, and taken him into the country for a few days. Every enquiry he could make after his daughter was equally unſucceſsful, till my maſter's exultation made the whole affair publick. This, if poſſible, gave freſh poignancy to his grief. He did not however deſert the wretched victim of ſuch villainy, but wrote to her directly to return to him, and hide her ſhame from the world in his boſom; but deſpair made her reject his offer.

As for her, a few days, in which my maſter left her to the comfort of her own reflections, diſcovered to her that his love had been injurious to her health, as well as to her peace of mind. What ſhe felt at this diſcovery may eaſily be conceived. She wrote to him in the agony of her ſoul, to reproach ſuch manifold baſeneſs; but inſtead of an anſwer of excuſe or conſolation, received only a quack doctor's adverti ſement, and a bank-note for a trifling ſum, encloſed in a blank cover. The ſame poſt brought her her father's offer of forgiveneſs and reception. The contraſt was more than ſhe could bear. She hurried back to town, where deſpair prompting her to revenge her folly on herſelf by ſtill deeper ruin, ſhe plunged into all the horrors of a life of common proſtitution.

This filled the meaſure of her father's woe. He had no redreſs to expect in this world; and therefore re-

ſigning the puniſhment of his wrongs to the great Avenger, indulged his grief in ſilence, till in a few months it brought his grey hairs to the grave.

CHAP. VII.

" CHRYSAL's *maſter pays his court to a great perſon,*
" *who ſeems not much to reliſh his humour, and ex-*
" *preſſes ſome unfaſhionable ſentiments concerning*
" *polite pleaſures. In the courſe of a regular progreſ-*
" *ſion* CHRYSAL *comes into the poſſeſſion of a Beau.*"
Hiſtory of a Beau, with a journal of his manner of life for one day CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, in a common way, for that of a* LADY OF FASHION.

" THE next morning after my maſter's return to
" *London*, he went to pay his court to the
" Heir of the Crown, who was then at one of his
" country-ſeats. Some publick occaſion had brought
" a concourſe more than uſual, in thoſe retirements,
" to pay their duty to the Prince, that morning. As
" my maſter was one of the laſt who came, as ſoon
" as his devoirs were ended, ſome of the company
" accidentally aſked him what had kept him ſo late;
" on which, with an eaſy air of pleaſantry, he an-
" ſwered aloud, that he had been detained by a very
" whimſical affair:" " A certain nobleman" (ſaid he)
" went into company laſt night, ſo *immenſely* drunk,
" that having ſat down to play, and loſt five thou-
" ſand pound, he quite forgot it this morning, and
" refuſed to pay the money, till ſome *perſon of ho-*
" *nour*, who was unconcerned in the matter, ſhould
" vouch his having loſt it fairly; on which it was
" referred to me, and ſorry I am that I was qualified
" to give it againſt him."

" How, my Lord! by being a perſon of honour!"
(ſays the gentleman ſpoke to.)——

" No!"

"No!" (replied my master, with a significant smile) "not so neither! but by being unconcerned in winning it."——And then turning short to another, "but have you heard the news, my Lord?" (said he) "Mr.——— caught his wife yesterday, taking a "serious walk in *Kensington* gardens with the gentleman whom we all know he forbad her keeping "company with, some time ago."———

"A smile of general approbation encouraged him "so much, that he concluded with saying, he wished "he had himself been the happy delinquent so taken, "as he doubted not but the greatest bishop on the "bench would, were he to speak his mind honestly."

"The Prince had heard him without interruption; "but as soon as he had ended, turning to a noble"man who stood near him, There can be no greater "insult" (said he, with a determined look and solemn accent) "to a person who is appointed to put "the laws of a country in execution, than for any "one to boast of a breach of those laws in his pre"sence. For my part, if I am ever called by Pro"vidence to that station, it is my invariable resolu"tion, that no man, how exalted so ever in rank, "who lives in open violation of any law, human or "divine, shall ever hold employment under me, or "receive countenance from me."

"This rebuke damped my master's spirits, as it "struck a reverential awe into all present. He hung "down his head; and in a few minutes withdrew "quite abash'd. But he soon recovered; and to "silence the jests of his companions, and shew that "he was not to be brow-beaten out of his own way, "he made one with them to spend the evening at a "brothel-tavern, where he gave me to a pimp, who "gave me to a whore, who gave me to a bully, who "gave me to a pawn-broker, who gave me to a "beau." Vol. 2.—Page 98—*

* *As this conclusion of the foregoing character is so short, it is inserted to preserve the connection, and save the reader the trouble of referring.*

My new master was one of those cyphers in nature, who seem born only to make up the number of mankind. The poor pittance, which pride of family spares from the eldest son, to save the rest from starving, had been just enough to purchase him a commission in the guards, in which he signalized his prowess on the parade, and talked as big, and looked as bluff as the best, while his campaigns were confined to *St. James's Park*. But the prospect of a war changed his note. The irregularities, and licentiousness of a military life now shock'd his delicacy, and he exchanged for half-pay; and retaining only the convenient title of *captain*, resolved to push his fortune in the gentler way of matrimony.

For this purpose he directly commenced *beau*, as the fair sex is soonest caught by the eye, and when that is pleased, seldom enquire farther. Accordingly he now studied nothing but fashions, as all his care was to procure cloaths to keep up to them, which the narrowness of his circumstances made so difficult for him to do, that his belly mourned many a time for the finery of his back. Nor was that his only difficulty. The very expence of going into company to display that finery, was often as distressing to him as to procure it.

It was on an occasion of this kind, that I came into his possession. His shewy appearance, together with his *being one whom every body knew*, making him a convenient *faggot* to fill up those *musters*, the only end of which is to shew the consequence of the *commanding officer*, by the numbers he can croud together, there was hardly a genteel *route* in town, to which he was not invited. Such a distinction was the height of his ambition; accordingly having received a *card*, to summon him to one the next evening, he was not able to resist the temptation of so favourable an opportunity of shewing himself to the ladies, though his finances were so low, that he had no other way to defray the expence of his chair, but by applying to such a place as this, *where distress is preyed upon by profession, and really aggravated under the deceitful appearance of momentary relief*; an expedient indeed to which he was well

well accuſtomed. As ſoon as it was dark, therefore, he came wrapped up in a horſeman's coat, and pulling a laced waiſtcoat out of his boſom, mortgaged it for three guineas, *one of which I was.*

When this weighty tranſaction was concluded, he returned home, and changing his dreſs repaired to a coffee-houſe at the court end of the town, where he talked over the news of the day with all the ſignificant airs and importance of *one in the ſecret*, confirming every word he ſaid with the authority of *his couſin* this lord, or *his friend* that duke, till he *carelеſſly out-ſtay'd all his engagements for ſupper*, when a *Welch rabbit*, and three penny-worth of punch made him amends for the want of a dinner, and he went home ſatisfied.

Well as I was by this time acquainted with the inconſiſtencies of human life, I could not help being ſtruck with the contradiction between the external appearance, and domeſtick œconomy of my new maſter. The former was in all the elegance of taſte and affluence, while the latter was regulated by the ſtricteſt parſimony that nature could ſupport. He lodged in an houſe, which opened into a genteel ſtreet, and had a back door into a blind ally, that ſerved him whenever he choſe to go out, or come in *incog.* Here one room up three pair of ſtairs (but the name of the ſtreet overbalanced that, and every other inconvenience) ſerved him for every purpoſe of life, in moſt of which he miniſtred to himſelf, undiſturbed by the company of any one, but his hair-dreſſer, laundreſs, and taylor, at their appointed times. To all others he was conſtantly denied by the people of the houſe, who received all meſſages for him, and returned proper anſwers. But the manner of his life will be beſt deſcribed by the hiſtory of the one day I was in his poſſeſſion; the buſineſs of every day being invariably the ſame.

As he had ſat up late, it was near noon when he aroſe, by which *genteel* indulgence he ſaved coals, for his fire was never lighted till after he was up. He then ſallied out *to breakfaſt* in the tarniſh'd laced frock, and his thick ſoled ſhoes, read the papers in the coffee-houſe *(too ſoon after breakfaſt to take any thing)* and

then walked a turn in the Park till it was time to dreſs for dinner, when he went home, and finding his ſtomach out of order *from his laſt night's debauch*, and his *late breakfaſting*, he ſent the maid of the houſe for a baſon of pea-ſoup from the cook's ſhop *to ſettle* it, by the time he had taken which, it was too late for him to think of going any where to dine, *though he had ſeveral appointments with people of the firſt faſhion*. When this frugal meal was over, he ſet about the real buſineſs of the day. He took out, and bruſhed his beſt clothes, ſet his ſhirt to the fire to air, put on his ſtockings and ſhoes, and then ſitting down to his toilet, on which his waſhes, paints, tooth-powders, and lip-ſalves were all placed in order, had juſt finiſhed his face, when his hair-dreſſer came, one hour under whoſe hands compleated him a firſt-rate beau.

When he had contemplated himſelf for ſome time with pride of heart, and practiſed his looks and geſtures at the glaſs, a chair was called, which carried him to a ſcene of equal magnificence and confuſion. From the brilliant appearance of the company, and the eaſe, and ſelf-complacency in all their looks, it ſhould have ſeemed that there was not one poor or unhappy perſon among them. But the caſe of my maſter had convinced me what little faith is to be given to appearances, as I alſo found upon a nearer view, that many of the gayeſt there were in no better a condition than he.

Having reconnoitred one another ſufficiently to lay in a fund for remarks, and bandied about the common cant of compliments, the company ſat down to cards, when the looks of many of them ſoon underwent a change. For *Prudential reaſons* my maſter always declined engaging in parties of this nature, but this night all his addreſs could not excuſe him. A lady, *whom he had dreſſed at* for a conſiderable time happening to come late unluckily *wanted one*, and ſeeing him idle would take no apology. He complied therefore with the beſt grace he could, and invoking fortune with more fervency, than he had ever prayed to heaven, *cut in*; when chancing *to fall againſt her*, her ſuperior luck,

luck, or ſkill, aided not a little by his anxiety, ſoon ſtripped him of every ſhilling in his pocket, and ſent him home, in a penſive mood, to ſtudy *ways and means* for raiſing another ſupply; and on this occaſion I followed the ſmiles of fortune, and entered into the ſervice of the winner.

CHAP. VIII.

Hiſtory of CHRYSAL's *new miſtreſs. She is brought into diſtreſs by her beauty, from which a lucky interview relieves her. The danger of arguing in favour of inclination againſt reaſon. Her friends put her to ſchool to learn manners, and afterwards marries her. His family ſhew impotent reſentment, at which he is ſo enraged that he makes his will, by which he leaves her his whole fortune; and then dies. An uncommon inſtance of the good nature of the world.*

THOUGH my late maſter had put the beſt face he could upon the matter, and excuſed his breaking up the party at the end of the firſt *rubber*, on a pretence of being taken ſuddenly ſick, my miſtreſs ſaw through him. "Sick indeed!" (ſaid ſhe, laughing) "hah! hah! hah! poor captain! I do not doubt "but you are, and that at heart! I ſaw it coming "upon you, ever ſince the firſt deal, when *I held* "*four by honours!* but I don't wonder at it. A full "rubber was too much. Two Guineas and an half "are no trifle to ſome people!"———

Two or three other viſits, which ſhe had to pay that evening, preventing her making a new party, ſhe only ſtaid to tell the ſtory of the captain's ſickneſs to every one ſhe knew in the room, who all joined in the laugh againſt him.

I ſee you are ſhocked at ſuch an inſtance of inſenſibility; but if you will reflect a moment, you will find you have no reaſon. Though poverty is attended with many real evils, yet when the worſt of them are volun-

tarily encountered to gratify vanity, the pity, otherwiſe due to it, is juſtly turned into contempt; and the efforts uſed to hide it, which are always ſeen through, treated with ridicule and inſult.

The morning after I came into the poſſeſſion of my new miſtreſs, ſhe brought to concluſion an affair of a moſt extraordinary nature, which few women beſide herſelf would have had ſpirit even to undertake. To explain it properly to you, it will be neceſſary to give you a ſhort ſketch of her ſtory.

The gifts of nature are either a bleſſing, or a curſe, according to the uſe made of them. My miſtreſs was born in one of the loweſt claſſes of mankind; the obſcurity of her birth though ſeemed to be made amends for, by the endowments of her perſon and mind, which were ſuch as raiſed univerſal admiration, from their firſt infant dawn. But theſe, tempting the licentious ſpoiler, like the beauty of a flower growing in the highway, loſt their advantage, and proved her ruin, for want of proper care.

She had ſcarce paſſed her childhood, when one of thoſe female purveyors for vice, who go about like their maſter, ſeeking whom they may deſtroy, to the diſgrace not only of their own ſex, but alſo of human nature, marked her out as proper for her purpoſe. There was no difficulty either of getting her into her power, or ſeducing her mind. The poverty of her parents made them glad to part with her, without farther enquiry, to any one who promiſed to take care of her, only to be delivered from the expence of her ſupport, as it had prevented their giving her the leaſt education to form her manners, or inſpire her mind with principles of virtue. Such a ſubject was exactly ſuited for ſo vile an agent to work upon. She took her home; dreſſed her up decently, and teaching her what account to give of herſelf, proſtituted her, while ſhe could make any profit of her, and then turned her adrift upon the world to live as well as ſhe could, on the earning of ſin and wretchedneſs.

I muſt not attempt to deſcribe the life of a common proſtitute! it is too horrible! ſhe had run through the

the loweſt ſcenes of it for ſome time, when fortune one night threw into her way, one of thoſe old debilitated debauchees, who indulge in the ſpeculation after they are paſt the practice of vice. Something in her air and manner, as ſhe *picked him up*, ſtruck him. He took her to a tavern, where he was ſtill more pleaſed with her uncommon ſmartneſs and vivacity. "I am cloyed" (ſaid he, to himſelf) "with "the groſs ignorance of the women of the town! I "hate the impertinent airs of virtue, which thoſe "of better education give themſelves! I'll therefore "unite thoſe qualifications, which ſeparately pleaſe "me in both, in this young creature who can ne"ver offend me by pretences to virtue, at the ſame "time that the excellence of her underſtanding will "receive, and reward me with the fruits of, the "beſt education."

There was novelty in the whim; and therefore he reſolved to carry it into execution. He took her home with him, and ſending for the moſt eminent maſters in every part of polite education, put her under their care, and incited their application by moſt liberal promiſes of reward.

Young as ſhe was, and hackneyed in every vicious habit, ſhe had a ſufficient ſenſe of the change in her way of life, not to forfeit the advantage by any miſbehaviour, or neglect. On the contrary, ſhe applied herſelf ſo cloſely to every thing taught her, and ſhewed a diſpoſition ſo deſirous of improvement in every ſenſe, that her benefactor, proud of the diſcernment, which could diſcover ſuch talents, under ſo great diſadvantages, became enamoured of the effects of his own benevolence and care. "I have at "length found" (would he ſay to himſelf) "what "I have hitherto ſought in vain, a woman that can "make me happy! Her wit and underſtanding will "enliven the hour of heavineſs; while a falſe parade "of virtue will ever throw a damp on pleaſantry "and mirth. What though her birth is obſcure! "are we not all deſcended from one common ſtock? "is the blood of a peaſant leſs pure, than that of a

" prince?——If ſhe has taken a falſe ſtep, in the " weakneſs of her youth, that ſhould be charged to " fate that led her into temptation, before ſhe had " reaſon to reſiſt it!——But all theſe ſeeming diſad- " vantages are now turned in her favour. Her ex- " perience in the ways of the world will make it " impoſſible to deceive her again. Her conſciouſneſs " of the meanneſs of her own family will give her a " proper ſenſe of the honour of being admitted into " mine; and ſave me from the intolerable plague of " having her pedigree run in my ears every hour. " Her youth and luxuriance of conſtitution will alſo " ſupply to our children the defects which too eager " a purſuit of pleaſure may have made in mine. Let " thoſe who are dependant on the world, regard its " cenſure; I am above it, and will purſue my own " happineſs wherever it leads me."

There is nothing more dangerous, than ſeeking for arguments in favour of inclination againſt reaſon. Trifles, light as air, will be admitted as the weighti- eſt proofs of that which is wiſhed to be proved; and palliatives barely poſſible, anſwer objections in their nature unanſwerable. He had taken a liking to her! he had taken it into his head to ſecure the gratifica- tion of that liking, by marrying her: and a very lit- tle arguing with himſelf in this manner ſoon convin- ced him, not only of the expediency of ſuch a mar- riage to his happineſs; but alſo of the obligation he was under of doing that juſtice to her merit, and his own judgment. The conſequence may be eaſily con- cluded. He married her, as he profeſſed, in obedi- ence to reaſon, rather than to gratify inclination.

But the caſe was very different with the world, which, far from ſeeing the force of his arguments, laughed at him for being taken thus in a ſnare of his own making, his own family in particular beheld her with eyes perhaps not leſs blinded by intereſt, than his were by inclination; and depreciating the merit ſhe really had, repreſented his marriage as the mere effect of vicious dotage.

Nothing is ſo ill judged as to ſhew impotent re- ſentment. It only provokes a return of none effect; and

and makes a wound incurable which otherwiſe might have healed of itſelf. Incenſed that they ſhould preſume to cenſure actions, which they could not controul, he directly made his will, by which he gave away the inheritance of his anceſtors from his own blood, leaving his whole fortune to his wife, as a teſtimony of his unaltered regard for her, and to ſhew his reſentment to them; ſoon after which he died.

This was more than her moſt ſanguine hopes could ever have riſen to. She was in the prime of life; and poſſeſſed of a fortune to afford her all its pleaſures. Theſe advantages, (and I ſhould add her beauty, which was in the perfection of ripened bloom) naturally attracted a number of admirers of different kinds, and with as different views, who all thought themſelves ſure of her, from the circumſtances of her paſt life. Needy adventurers (ſuch as my late maſter) paid court to her fortune, in the matrimonial way; while her beauty attracted the more dangerous addreſs of thoſe who meant no more than pleaſure. But ſhe was guarded againſt both. She had taſted ſomething of the ſweets of virtuous reputation, and knew the value of it too well to forfeit it entirely again by compliance with the latter; and her pride and experience ſet her above all the ſchemes of the former.

She lived thus for ſome time in the higheſt happineſs, of which ſhe had any idea, for ſhe was a ſtranger to that falſe delicacy, which creates itſelf imaginary uneaſineſſes, and palls the enjoyment of preſent pleaſures. She was admitted into good company, where her behaviour, if not abſolutely approved of, was ſtill received with good-natured allowances, as much better than might have been expected from the circumſtances of her life; and ſhe herſelf treated with tenderneſs to encourage her to perſeverance, in ſo uncommon an amendment. But this happineſs was too great to laſt long undiſturbed.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

The common conſequence of over-doing things. Her huſband's relations find but a flaw in his will. The comfort of having good lawyers to keep up a client's ſpirits. For the advantage of having two ſtrings to her bow, ſhe enters into an engagement of marriage, under an heavy penalty. The event of her law-ſuit ſhews the prudence of this precaution. She is caſt; her lover flies off, and ſhe ſues him for the penalty of his engagement. He begs the money among his friends, and then by a nice fineſſe plays her own game back upon her, and flings her off with half. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

IT daily happens, that men defeat their own intentions, by carrying them too far. Hurried away by his paſſion, her huſband in making his will, had exceeded the power veſted in him by the law, and ſo by ſtriving to give her more than he had a right, really gave her much leſs. But it was a conſiderable time, before his family recovered ſufficiently from the aſtoniſhment and confuſion with which ſuch a ſtroke overwhelmed them, to perceive this, and be able to purſue proper meaſures for taking advantage of it.

The firſt notice my miſtreſs received of this affair, was by an offer they made her to refer their claim to private deciſion, in order to avoid the expence and trouble of a law-ſuit. But though the former part of her life had impreſſed her with horror at the very name of the law, ſhe would not liſten to ſuch a propoſal, without taking *proper* advice, the reſult of which may be eaſily judged.

Lawyers will never loſe a good client for want of giving hopes. Her's perſuaded her ſo fully of the juſtice of her cauſe, and gave her ſuch poſitive aſſurance of ſucceſs, that ſhe reſolved to ſpare no expence to obtain it. Though *right* and *wrong* are ſo eſſentially

tially different from each other, they yet are ſometimes involved in ſuch intricacies, by the induſtry of thoſe, whoſe profeſſion it is to diſtinguiſh between them, that it is difficult to know which is which. It was ſo in this caſe. They had raiſed ſuch clouds, that reaſon could not ſee through them; and ſo every one was left to ſpeak according to inclination.

While matters were in this ſituation, one of her admirers thought it a proper time to puſh his fortune with her. His rank and expectations in life raiſed him above the neceſſity of ſuch a ſcheme; but avarice will ſtoop to any thing; and he would gladly have taken her, with all her faults, for the ſake of her fortune, the certainty of her eſtabliſhing her right to which he had taken care to be well aſſured of by ſages learned in the law, before he laid ſiege to her. This however he was far from avowing. He pleaded the moſt diſintereſted love, and preſſed for a return with all the ardency of deſire.

But though ſhe could not do ſo much injuſtice to her charms, as to doubt their power of inſpiring ſuch a paſſion, ſhe poſitively refuſed to liſten to any propoſals of marriage, till her law-ſuit ſhould be decided, *from a generous fear of involving him in inconveniencies*, which her lawyers poſitively aſſured her could never happen; as he *with equal generoſity*, founded on the like aſſurances, offered to marry her, while it was ſtill depending; whereas the truth of the matter was with both, that *he thought he could make a better bargain, as ſhe knew ſhe muſt a worſe*, if it ſhould be concluded, till every thing was abſolutely ſettled.

They had played this game upon each other for ſome time, when a diffident word dropped by one of her lawyers, as the day of deciſion drew near, determined her to change her ſyſtem, and make ſure of ſomething for fear of the worſt. Accordingly, the next time her lover viſited her, on his repeating his profeſſions of the violence of his paſſion, and offering as a proof of its diſintereſtedneſs to enter into a mutual engagement of marriage, as ſoon as the ſuit ſhould

ſhould be ended one way or other, under the penalty of a large ſum of money on the refuſer, ſhe let herſelf be overcome by ſuch an inſtance of ſincerity, and taking him at his word, ſigned the engagement directly.

The event juſtified this caution; for after all the aſſurances of ſucceſs, by which ſhe had been led on by her lawyers to run into every expence they could deviſe, juſtice appeared ſo ſtrongly in favour of her opponents, that ſhe *was caſt*; and a conſiderable part of the eſtate of her huſband adjudged to return directly to his family, and the reſt after her death.

Though what remained to her was more than ſufficient to ſupport her in the genteeleſt manner, ſhe could not but feel at firſt a fall from ſo high hopes; but her ſpirit had been too well exerciſed in the beginning of her life, to yield long to any thing; and ſhe had almoſt got the better of it, when ſomething that piqued her reſentment, rouſed her effectually. Among all the *friends*, who came on this occaſion *to gratify the inſolence of condoling her misfortune*, ſhe was not a little ſurprized never to ſee the face of her lover. As ſhe could not be at a loſs for the mean motive of ſuch behaviour, ſhe might poſſibly have treated it with the contempt it deſerved, had not neceſſity urged her to ſhew a warmer reſentment.

The expences of her law-ſuit had involved her in debts (for ſhe never lowered her living, depending on the aſſurances given her of ſucceſs) which were now demanded with an importunity that perplexed her. This was juſt at the time when ſhe took notice of the deſertion of her lover. The urgency of her creditors therefore ſuggeſted it to her, to call upon him to fulfil his engagement of marriage, which his conduct convinced her, he would forfeit the penalty rather than do, by which means ſhe ſhould puniſh him for his raſhneſs, and extricate herſelf from her difficulties at the ſame time; for had ſhe thought that he would fulfil it, there was nothing ſhe would not have ſuffered ſooner than link her fate to him.

There

There is ſomething in a woman's calling upon a man to marry her, ſo contrary to thoſe notions of delicacy, on which the ſuperior claſs of the female ſex value themſelves, that perhaps no other woman of her rank could have prevailed upon herſelf to do it. But ſhe had not been born in, nor bred up with expectations of that rank; her notions therefore were of a coarſer complexion; and though ſhe had learned the external modes of behaviour, *the trick of complaiſance*, ſhe had been put to ſchool too late in life, to change her ſentiments ſo far as to make her think it neceſſary to ſacrifice ſo powerful motives as reſentment and intereſt, to a delicacy that appeared to her merely phantaſtick.

The moment therefore the thought occurred, ſhe applied once more to her lawyer; and by his advice wrote a letter to her lover, in which ſhe directly claimed the performance of his engagement. But as this was no more than his heart told him he muſt expect, (for he would have done the very ſame thing himſelf) he was prepared how to anſwer her. Accordingly he wrote to her in the moſt artful manner, *excuſing his not having been to wait upon her, ſince the fatal deciſion of her law-ſuit, on account of the pain he muſt feel at ſeeing her, when he had loſt all hopes of ever calling her his; for as her generoſity would not permit her to marry while there was only a poſſibility of ſuch a misfortune, he could not ſuppoſe, that her ſenſe of honour and juſtice would now, when it had actually happened; and for this reaſon he deſired that ſhe ſhould pleaſe to ſend him his engagement, not that it was of any conſequence as he would return her's, to whom he wiſhed the higheſt happineſs in every ſcene, and view of life* ——Such a refuſal was juſt what ſhe wanted! ſhe therefore inſtantly commenced a ſuit at law with him to recover the penalty of his engagement, which he had thus forfeited to her.

The care he had taken himſelf, to make the engagement as binding as poſſible, precluding every hope of defeating her claim; and his knowledge of her temper convincing him that it would be in vain to attempt

prevailing

no ſecurity to give for that truſt; a fool-hardineſs that muſt proceed either from a conſciouſneſs of having himſelf no honour to loſe, a total diſregard to the loſs, or an affectation of acting on different principles from the reſt of mankind, as a proof of being above their prejudices. Where her honour indeed has been loſt to himſelf, juſtice makes it a duty on him to repair her loſs by marriage; but then that very marriage is a puniſhment for his crime, as it muſt want the eſſential happineſs of confidence; for he will always be ready to ſuſpect, that the diſpoſition which betrayed her into error with him, may have the ſame effect with others. Nor is this ſuſpicion unnatural.

I ſee you would argue from the habitual, avowed incontinence of man, that this truſt of honour is not equal, and therefore cannot be obliging. But this is judging without duly conſidering the ſubject. Chaſtity in its nature, a virtue equally the duty of both ſexes to obſerve, and with regard to ſociety in general, the violation of it is equally criminal in both; but in thoſe nearer connections of life, the intereſt of which is the more immediate object of human attention, the conſequences of that violation in a woman are attended with ſo much greater inconveniences than in man, that in reſpect to them, the crime is obviouſly leſs pardonable in her, than in him; and for this reaſon, *this virtue of chaſtity is made in a peculiar manner, the honour of woman*; while *the honour of man* is placed *in other virtues*, from which ſhe receives as much advantage, as he does from her chaſtity; and therefore the truſt of honour is mutual and equal.——In diſtinguiſhing thus between *honour* and *virtue*, I ſpeak according to the notions of mankind; in their own nature, there is no diſtinction between them.

There was ſomething in the whole appearance of the perſon to whom my miſtreſs *paid me away*, that made me expect to ſee a character of a caſt, which I had not yet met with among mankind. His looks were ſly, methodical and plodding. Practice had fixed upon his paſſive face the hollow varniſh of a ſervile ſmile; and an over-acted affectation of polite behaviour made

his

his natural aukwardneſs truly ridiculous. But under all this, I could ſee a depth of deſign, and a latitude of principle equal to any *great* attempt, the ſucceſs of which ſhould in the opinion of the world determine the quality of that *greatneſs*, whether *villainy*, or *virtue*.

The knowledge of his life, which is neceſſary to explain his character, and account for the principles, upon which he acted conſiſtently his manifold part, will be comprized in a few words. Sprung from the dregs of the people, and turned looſe upon the world to ſhift for himſelf, as ſoon as he was able to crawl, he took his ſtand about the houſe of a perſon in buſineſs, where he hardly earned a morſel of broken victuals by running of errands, cleaning ſhoes, and ſuch other offices, as are performed by thoſe *ſervants* of *ſervants*.

I ſee you wonder at my ſaying he was ſprung from *the dregs of the people*, as if difference of rank could make any alteration in the eſſential equality of human nature; but without entering into a diſcuſſion of *undetermined* points, on both ſides of which much has been ſaid with equal ſtrength of reaſon, the beſt obſervation of the power of early example to impreſs thoſe principles, which are to govern the future life, will ſufficiently juſtify my uſing the expreſſion here.

The patience, with which he was obliged to bear the cuffs and kicks of thoſe worſt of tyrants, who always wantonly revenge ten-fold upon their wretched underlings, whatever they ſuffer themſelves, taught him that hypocriſy, and abject ſubmiſſion, to every thing that might any way ſerve his convenience, which afterwards proved the ground-work of his fortune; as the example of his parents, who got their living by retailing to the poor the meaneſt neceſſaries of life; initiated him ſo early into every ſpecies of low fraud and chicane, that they became abſolutely natural to him, and invariably ruled the conduct of his life.

He had been ſome time in this hopeful courſe of education, when an accident opened him an opportunity of ſhewing what a progreſs he had made in it.

A brother

A brother of the perſon, about whoſe houſe he picked up the ſcraps that kept him alive, happening to ſee one of the ſervants beating him unmercifully, interfered from mere humanity, and ſaved him. The marks he bore of his beating raiſed a curioſity to know how he had deſerved it; when he gave ſo ſeemingly innocent, and pitiable an account of himſelf, and attributed the ſervant's cruelty ſo artfully to his having refuſed to do ſomething for him, which was improper for him to do, that the young gentleman believed him, and taking compaſſion on his diſtreſs, admitted him into the family to wait upon himſelf, by which he was delivered from his dependance on the other ſervants, and protected from their future inſults.

The humility, with which he behaved himſelf, in this firſt ſtep of his advancement, his aſſiduity, and ſeeming attachment to his maſter, ſoon won his good opinion ſo far, that he diſpenſed with his atendance, and ſent him to ſchool, where he applied himſelf ſo cloſely, and made ſuch a proficiency, that his maſter took him into his own buſineſs, in which his ſobriety, diligence, and obedient temper gained his confidence ſo entirely, that as ſoon as ever he thought him capable, he admitted him into fellowſhip with himſelf, and abſolutely reſigned the management of his whole buſineſs to him.

It may naturally be ſuppoſed, that he did not neglect to improve ſuch an opportunity of practiſing the leſſons he had learned in his youth. He ſecreted the profits of all the buſineſs, which his principal was not indiſpenſibly obliged to be perſonally engaged in; he ſupplanted him with ſuch as he could of his cuſtomers; he cheated of conſiderable ſums of money ſuch others, as long experience of his (the principal's) honeſty had put off their guard with him; and took every occaſion of inſinuating to the world, under the moſt effectual diſguiſe of friendly concern, and complaint, his negligence, and incapacity; at the ſame time, that he profeſſed to himſelf the moſt implicite reſpect and obedience, and ſeemed ambitious of ſhewing his gratitude and attachment by performing the

ſame

ſame ſervile offices, which had been his firſt occupation about him.

But all this was trifling in compariſon with the ſtroke he made againſt him, in his own family. There was a near relation of his principal's, who was indebted to his friendly aſſiſtance, for the firſt ſtep of his riſe to *the rank of a colonel in the army*. Nature had been laviſh to him in the endowments of mind and body; but pride marred the bleſſing, and turned them all to his diſadvantage. Confidence in the external graces of his perſon made him neglect the improvement of his underſtanding, while an affectation of *ſingularity*, which is always aſſumed as a maſk to hide real ignorance, made him ſet his own opinion in oppoſition to the eſtabliſhed judgment of mankind.

As the conduct of ſuch a man muſt neceſſarily be irregular, his relation and friend my maſter's principal, exerted the authority of thoſe characters, and frequently reproved him in the ſincerity and well-meaning of his heart. The notion that this liberty, which when properly taken is the higheſt proof of regard, was aſſumed on the ſcore of obligation, gave offence to the captious haughtineſs of the *colonel*'s temper, and eſtranged an eſteem, which it ought to have confirmed.

This was an opportunity for my maſter to diſplay his talents He ſtudied the temper of the *colonel*, and paid court to his caprices. He cringed to his haughtineſs, bore his inſults, and miniſtred to his vices, with an implicite ſubmiſſion to his ſuperior ſenſe and judgment, which he received as the only ſtandard of right and wrong.

The contraſt between this complaiſance, and the ſuperiority, which *the colonel* thought his relation aſſumed by giving him advice, inſenſibly transferred to my maſter that regard, which his principal loſt. As this was what he had all along aimed at, he omitted nothing to widen the breach by inſinuations, ſo artfully conveyed as to aggravate the offence, taken by *the colonel*, and yet if repeated would bear a ſenſe directly oppoſite, and ſeem to ſpring entirely from friendly concern, ſhould a reconciliation between them bring his

practices

practices to light. But an event, that he could not ſcheme for, removed every ſuch apprehenſion, and rivetted his influence beyond his moſt ſanguine hopes.

CHAP. XI.

Further account of the COLONEL. CHRYSAL's *maſter, in conjunction with a female aſſociate proper for his purpoſe, compleats his ſcheme of alienating the* COLONEL's *regard from his family, of which he gives a proof of a moſt extraordinary nature. A remarkable inſtance of* CHRYSAL's *maſter's talents for a particular kind of wit, with a ſtriking account of the worthy manner in which he and his fair aſſociate acquitted themſelves of the truſt repoſed in them by the* COLONEL.

VAIN of the beauty of his perſon, *the colonel* prided himſelf in an opinion, that there was no woman whoſe virtue could reſiſt his addreſſes. This ſelf-conceit, which the frailty of the lower claſs of females had firſt given riſe to, was confirmed by his ſucceſs with one, whoſe fortune and education ſhould have ſecured her againſt his attacks. The glory of ſuch a conqueſt ſatisfied his vanity; and the pleaſure of having her on his own terms ſo endeared her to him, that he thought not of any other. One thing only gave him concern about her; which was, in whoſe care he ſhould leave her, when the buſineſs of the *campaign* called him into the *field*.

But in this he was not long at a loſs. The humble implicite attachment of my maſter, pointed him out as the perſon in every reſpect moſt proper for ſuch a truſt. To him, therefore, he committed her at his departure, hugging himſelf in the happineſs of having ſuch a miſtreſs, and ſuch a friend.

The nature of this truſt neceſſarily brought on an intimacy between my maſter, and his *charge*. Intimacies between the ſexes are dangerous in any circumſtances;

ſtances; but in their's, where ſhe could not even make pretence to that virtue, which could be her only guard, the conſequence is obvious. From this time, they joined their intereſts, and laid their heads together to eſtrange him from his own family, particularly my maſter's principal, who in caſe of death had the firſt claim, from law and nature, to his fortune.

In carrying on this ſcheme, they played into each other's hands with ſuch addreſs at his return, that when he was going to the next *campaign*, he made a will, by which he gave, not only his own large acquiſitions, but alſo the inheritance of his anceſtors between them, in ſuch a manner as plainly ſhewed a wrong mind, and ſupported his bequeſt with ſuch reaſons, as were an inſult to the laws and religion of his country; at the ſame time, that they perpetuated the infamy of thoſe, to whom it was made, by arguing expreſly in favour of the vices, which had gained them this mark of regard; and this will, the ſubſtance of which ſatisfied them for the circumſtances, he left in the hands of my maſter.

In this ſituation matters ſtood between the three, when I came into his poſſeſſion. When he had finiſhed the drudgery of the day, he went as uſual to ſpend the evening agreeably with his *charge*.

There was one ſpecies of what is called *wit*, upon his expertneſs in which my maſter valued himſelf not a little. This was telling a fictitious ſtory with ſo grave a face, and corroborating it with ſuch plauſible circumſtances as to raiſe the hearer's anxiety, and then to laugh at the eaſy faith that could be ſo *taken in*. Low as the merit of *ſuch wit* was, at the beſt, in him it had none at all. His fictions were no better than downright *lies*, deſtitute of imagination, or humour, and corroborated with nothing but *new-coined oaths* and *imprecations*, fit to afford entertainment only to the damned.

With an eſſay of this kind he reſolved to entertain his miſtreſs this evening. Exerting therefore all his command of countenance, "My deareſt love," (ſaid he with a melancholy look, and deep-drawn ſigh, as he entered the room) "I have received bad news,

"*blaſt*

" *blaſt my eyes!* there has been a battle, in which " our fool"———

" Has not been killed!" (interrupted ſhe, ſnatching the word out of his mouth,) " that is bad news in- " deed; but another battle may afford better."

I ſee you were ſtruck with horror at my repeating the imprecation he made uſe of on this occaſion. Inſtead therefore of intermixing them with every period of his diſcourſe. as he always does, I will in their place make a pauſe thus, ———, which will ſerve as well, for he uſes them in general, as no more than mere expletives.

" No!" (anſwered he, ſhrugging up his ſhoul- " ders,) that chance is loſt for ever——. " He has " received a wound———, which without endan- " gering his life, has diſabled him from further ſer- " vice, ſo that we ſhall be bleſt with his company " ——, for the reſt of our lives."

" Curſed, you ſhould ſay! But is there is no way " to be thought of, to prevent it? Could not pro- " per application be made to the ſurgeons?"

" All is too late! his leg was taken off directly—; " and the danger entirely over, when the account " came away; as you may ſee by his letter, in which " he writes me word—, that he hopes to be at home " with us, in a month, to leave us no more. Eh! " what have I done with this letter!—It ſhould be " in this pocket! I certainly have left it behind me, " in my confuſion——But you'll ſee it ſoon enough. " He ſends his love to you; and bids me tell you, he " would have wrote to you, but was prevented by " company, ſo that you ſee he cannot be in any " danger—But he'll make you amends. I ſee how " every thing will be——. He'll marry you, as ſoon " as he returns—; that he may introduce you into " his family, who will treat you with forced civili- " ty in order to get him into their hands again. I " ſee very well—how every thing will happen."

" No! that ſhall never happen! I hate themſelves, " and deſpiſe their civility. I had rather bear the " ſneers and inſults of the world than that. Nor will " I marry him, let what will be my fate! his inſolent

" capricious

" capricious humour is ſcarce to be born now; " though he curbs it, becauſe I am at my liberty to " leave him. What would it then be, were I to be " his ſlave for life? I had rather feign penitence, and " throw myſelf on the compaſſion of my own family, " than plunge into ſuch miſery. Marriage on any " terms is a ſtate I deſpiſe, but with him I abjure it."

This paſſion was ſuch a triumph to my maſter, that he could keep his countenance no longer. " Hah! " hah! hah! a fair *humbug*, damn me!" (ſaid he, burſting out into a horſe-laugh) " your humble ſervant, " madam! I thought you could not be *taken in*. Hah! " hah! hah! a fair *humbug*, damn me."

" *Taken in!*" (ſaid ſhe, vexed at being played upon, but more pleaſed that it was no worſe) " how can " you take delight in ſuch a low-lived-trick? If I " could not ſhew my wit in a better manner, I am " ſure I would give up all pretenſions to it."

" All pure ſpite and malice! But don't fret for it. " Come! we'll kiſs and be friends, and think no more " of the matter! only remember not to brag another " time that you cannot be *taken in* though! hah! " hah! hah!

Every thing being thus made up, their converſation for the reſt of the evening was ſuch as may be ſuppoſed between perſons of their caſt, and in their ſituation. They gloried in the ſucceſs of their ſchemes upon their common dupe, *the colonel*; they formed plans for ſpending his fortune. ſhould any lucky accident put an end to his life; they ridiculed the pride and ſelf-ſufficiency of which they had taken advantage; and concluded in their uſual way, with proving in each other's arms, *the juſtneſs* of his confidence in their fidelity.

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL's maſter receives an account of the death of the colonel. He finds after much deliberation that he cannot fling his worthy aſſociate out of the whole ſpoil, and therefore prudently reſolves to ſhare it with her by a marriage, of which he draws a comfortable picture. He urges his ſuit, and ſhe ſtrives to evade it by arguments conſiſtent with both their characters. He carries his point, in a particular manner.

BUT all this harmony was ſoon diſturbed for ever, by the accompliſhment of the very ſchemes it was founded on, which was much nearer than they imagined. The firſt news my maſter received on his return home next morning, was that *the colonel* had been killed in a late battle. This was an intereſting event! he directly locked himſelf up in his cloſet, and taking out the will, though he had often read it before, ſtudied every ſyllable of it over and over, to try if there was any poſſibility for him to *fling* his own and *the colonel's* common miſtreſs, and get the whole fortune himſelf; but he had the mortification to find that this exceeded all his ſagacity, and that the whole will muſt ſtand or fall together.

After ſome, not the moſt pleaſing, meditation therefore, "And ſo! (ſaid he, biting his nether lip, and turning up his eyes, with an execration, too horrid to be repeated) "I have been labouring all this while to "get a fortune for this *brimſtone!* A very pretty re- "ward truly, for ſupplanting my beſt benefactor! it "were better for me, that even he had it, than ſhe; "for then I might not only enjoy my ſhare of it as it "goes, along with him; but alſo very probably cheat "him out of the moſt of it, in the end. What though "I am to have it after her death; may not ſhe live as "long

" long as I? Beſide, I have made away with the great-
" eſt part of the money, and ſo am liable to be *blown up*
" and undone, whenever ſhe thinks proper to call it in;
" for I know too much of her, to expect that ſhe ſhould
" ſhew favour to any one, when once in her power.
" No! that ſhall never be! I have it in my power to
" ſet aſide the whole unnatural, nonſenſical will, and
" I will do it, if ſhe refuſes to come into terms with me.
" Such a ſacrifice of my own intereſt to gratitude and
" honeſty, as this will appear, will gain me ſo great
" reputation, that I ſhall make a better fortune myſelf,
" in a little time; and as to what I have embezzled, I
" know by experience, that I can *ſink* that upon my
" wiſe principal at a proper time, as I have done more
" before now; ſo that after all I may find honeſty to be
" the beſt policy, as the ſaying is. Well! be that as it
" will, I am reſolved to be honeſt to myſelf firſt, and
" do that which ſhall ſerve my own intereſt beſt, with-
" out regard to proverb, or opinion. Let me conſider
" then! Suppoſe I marry her; and ſo get poſſeſſion of
" all at once. But the devil of it is, that I muſt take
" her into the bargain; and I know her too well for
" that, if I could help it. She may moſt likely ſerve
" me the ſame trick, with ſome body elſe, that ſhe
" has ſerved this fool with me; *once a whore and al-*
" *ways a whore*. However, I muſt take my chance
" for that. Cunning as ſhe is, ſhe ſhall not cuckold
" me eaſily. If I am not a match for her, ſhe muſt
" be able to outwit the devil himſelf; ſo happy come
" lucky, I'll e'en venture."

Having reaſoned himſelf into this prudent reſolution, he would loſe no time; but went to her directly to carry it into execution. As ſoon as he met her, " I
" have brought you news now, (ſaid he) in earneſt.
" News, that will be either good or bad, according
" as you take it."

" Pſha; (anſwered ſhe ſlightingly) this is more of
" your *wit*, I ſuppoſe. But for heaven's ſake leave
" off making a fool of yourſelf, and teazing me. I
" am quite ſick of ſuch ſtuff."

" *Strike me to the centre*;" (replied he paſſionately)
" but I am ſerious. I have this moment received an

" account, that *the colonel* is actually dead. He was " killed in the late battle".

The look with which he ſaid this, had more weight with her, than all the oaths and imprecations he could utter, for much as he was maſter of his countenance, he could not conceal the agitation of his mind. " Dead!" (interrupted ſhe, eagerly) " thank heaven! " then all my fears are over."

" Aye! (replied he dryly) " but it is well if your " hopes are not alſo over with them."

" How? What do you mean? Has he not made " a will, by which all his fortune comes directly to " me? For heaven's ſake do not torture me in this " manner."

" Yes! he has made a will, it is true. But don't " you know that the laſt letter I received from him " revoked it, ſo that every thing goes now to his fa- " mily, for he lived not long enough to make another, " after he received his wound; though that is no " great loſs to you, for from what he ſaid when he " was dying, it would not have been much in your " favour."

" But did not you promiſe me, that you would ſup- " preſs that revocation, in caſe any thing of this kind " ſhould happen; which you ſaid you had it in your " power to do, as your principal was fool enough to " promiſe you, that he would never open any letters, " that ſhould come directed to you from the army, as " he had a right to do, by which means it had " luckily eſcaped coming to his knowledge."

" Perhaps I may have ſaid ſo! but do you think I " have no more conſcience, than to conceal ſuch a " thing; and rob a man to whom I am under ſo " great obligations?"

" Conſcience! for heaven's ſake, I conjure you " again, do not torture me any longer. Speak of " conſcience to thoſe who do not know you. I have " had ſufficient proof, that your *intereſt* is your *con-* " *ſcience*; and this will ſurely determine you to ſerve " me as you ſerve yourſelf at the ſame time. Is not " all to come to you at my death?"

" But

" But what am I to do, in the mean while? Come " then! as you ſay you know me ſo well, I'll offer you " a fair propoſal, that ſhall make it my *preſent intereſt* " (for that is what I regard) to ſerve you; and your " *future intereſt*, on which you lay ſo great a ſtreſs, " to ſerve me. Suppoſe, we join our intereſts in all " things, and marry. By this expedient I ſhall come " directly into the enjoyment of the fortune; and " your children will enjoy it."

" Marry! (exclaimed ſhe, ſtarting in ſurprize) what " could put ſuch a ſtrange thought into your head, " who know my ſentiments on that unnatural ſtate " of ſuperſtition and ſlavery? No! that of all things, " I can never come into. But, I ſee you are at your " *humbugging* again. The profeſſions, and oaths of " friendſhip, you have ſo often made me"—

" Were all but wind," (anſwered he) " and have left " no trace behind them. But this kind of talking " anſwers no end. The whole depends on the one " word, by which you anſwer me this ſhort queſtion, " Will you marry me? Or will you not?" If you conſent, I will ſecrete the papers, that ſet aſide the " will, and ſo we ſhall ſhare the fortune between us. " If you refuſe, I will give them up to his family, " who will directly defeat your claim, and then you " may follow for your living that libertine way of life, " you appear ſo fond of; for I have no notion of damning my character in this world, and my ſoul in the " next, to ſerve any other but myſelf. Conſider " therefore before you ſpeak, as I will go directly " from you to them if you refuſe me."

Such a menace was not ineffectual to one who knew him ſo well. " Will nothing elſe ſatisfy you? (replied ſhe, burſting into tears) " No part of the for- " tune; and to continue as we are at preſent, man " and wife in every thing but the curſed ceremony."

" No! that ceremony is the very thing I want, " and nothing elſe; becauſe that only can give me a " right to your fortune; for as to your perſon, I " would not have you think I ſet any value on that! " I have long ſince had enough of it: and for ſharing

" the fortune, I am reſolved I will have all or none; " and this is the reaſon, why I make you ſuch an " offer; for otherwiſe, I aſſure you, I hate marri- " age as much as you poſſibly can. So let me have " your anſwer directly, for I will not trifle thus a " moment longer."

The manner in which he ſaid this left her no room to doubt his reſolution. " Well then" (replied ſhe ſighing) " if you will have it ſo, it muſt be ſo; and I " conſent becauſe I cannot help it. But when is this " bleſſed marriage to be ſolemnized?"

" As for that, I am in no more hurry than you. " All I deſire is that you will directly ſign a promiſe " of marriage, whenever I think proper to call upon " you. I'll go this inſtant, and draw it up; and leave " you to conſider how much better this is for us " both, than to have diſagreed, and let all go to his " family."

He waited not for a reply; nor was long before he returned with the deed, which ſhe ſigned with evident reluctance.

CHAP. XIII.

Account of the method, which CHRYSAL's *maſter took to obviate the effects of his principal's reſentment, with the characteriſtick converſation that paſſed between them, on the former's avowing the Colonel's will.* CHRYSAL's *maſter over-ſhoots his mark, and provokes his principal to do more than he ever intended. An uncommon inſtance of the juſtice of the world.* CHRYSAL's *maſter obliges the lady to court him in her turn, and at length marries her. The conſequences of ſuch a marriage, and fruits of the ſucceſs of all their ſchemes.*

THIS point being ſettled, the next thing was to produce the *colonel*'s will, the thought of doing which gave him ſome alarm in ſpite of all his fortitude, as it would be throwing off the maſk he

he had worn all his life, and declaring war with his Principal, who he judged from himſelf, would not fail to publiſh to the world the meanneſs of his original, and the miſery from which his compaſſion had raiſed him.

But ſuch thoughts, diſagreeable as they might be, could not divert him from his purpoſe. To diſable his Principal though as far as poſſible from carrying his reſentment any farther than words, he ranſacked all his papers, and took away not only ſuch as related immediately to the private tranſactions between themſelves, but alſo thoſe of other people, with whom they had been concerned in buſineſs, in order to diſtreſs his circumſtances, and involve him in ſuch perplexities as ſhould lay him under a neceſſity of keeping fair with him. But this precaution, like many other's dictated by the ſame ſpirit, occaſioned the very thing it was deſigned to prevent.

The firſt news of the affair was like a thunder-clap to the family of *the colonel*. My maſter's Principal, though, who in the courſe of law and nature, had the firſt expectations, as I have ſaid before, could not believe it to be true, ſo high was his confidence in the honeſty and attachment of my maſter. To ſatisfy however the importunities of his family, he came to him, and with a look of indignation at the baſeneſs of ſuch a report, rather than apprehenſion of the truth of it. "I am come" (ſaid he) "to tell you "a piece of news, I have juſt this moment heard, "which is that *the colonel* has left his whole fortune "between that jade, his miſtreſs, and you; and "that you were privy to his will, which he left in "your hands when he was going abroad. But the "latter part of the ſtory makes me eaſy about the "reſt; for whatever his capricious temper might "lead him to do, I am convinced you would have "no hand in ſo baſe an affair, nor even conceal his "having ſuch an intention from me a moment. I ſee "you are ſhocked at the ſcandalous imputation; but "do not think I mention it, as if I believed it. I "could not do you ſo much wrong."

The firſt impreſſions of youth can never be totally effaced. Though my maſter could lay ſchemes to

cheat the Principal, and revile him behind his back, he had learned to look at him with an awe, when a beggar about his brother's houſe, and afterwards his ſervant, that he could never after get over, when in his preſence. This awe added to the confuſion of conſcious guilt, made him unable to make any anſwer for ſome moments, and had wrought that change in his countenance which the other took notice of.

As ſoon as he could collect ſpirits to ſpeak, "I—"I——I am obliged to every one, ſ—ſ—for their "good opinion of me;" (ſaid he, with his eyes fixed on the ground, and faultering on at every word) "and hope I ſhall not ſ—ſ—ſ— forfeit it by ac-"cepting the favours of my friends."

"How! (interrupted the other eagerly) "what "can you mean by that? You ſurely do not, can-"not avow"——

"As for that; Sir! (returned my maſter, plucking up a little more aſſurance) "what I avow or diſavow "is nothing to the purpoſe. I preſume that my *moſt* "*dear and worthy friend the colonel*, had a right to "leave his fortune to whom he pleaſed; and that who-"ever he has left it to has alſo a right to take it, "without being anſwerable to your opinion, or that "of any others, who may be prejudiced by you; for "the world will judge better, and be ſatisfied that "he had ſufficient reaſons for what he had done."

"And ſo then! it is even ſo!" (replied the other, after a long pauſe) "and this is the return I meet "for raiſing you from wretchedneſs, and admitting "you to the firſt place in the eſteem, and confi-"dence in my heart. *Cheriſh a viper in your boſom,* "*and be will ſting you to death.* But it is beneath me "to upbraid you! I leave the revenge of my wrongs "to your own conſcience, and the juſtice of heaven; "and from this moment diſclaim all intercourſe with "you; nor ſhall my lips ever more utter your name if "I can help it. The ſight of you is a pain to me "I will ſend a perſon to take my affairs out of your "hands, and deſire you will directly provide yourſelf "another habitation! Unhappy for me was the day "when I firſt gave ſhelter to your miſery in mine."—

Saying

Saying this he turned away without waiting for a reply, and left the room.

This inſolent behaviour (for ſo my maſter called it, as ſoon as the other was gone) was ſuch an affront to *his honour*, as in his opinion cancelled all obligations, and juſtified every thing he had done or could do againſt him. Giving vent to his reſentment therefore in *a burſt of blaſphemous execrations*, he proceeded in the execution of his ſchemes, with this improvement, that to obviate the imputations of baſe diſhoneſty and ingratitude, which his own conſcience told him, his Principal would publiſh to the world againſt him, he loaded him with every ſcandal, that his inventive malice could ſuggeſt. But inſtead of anſwering his purpoſe, produced the very contrary effect, as it put him under a neceſſity of laying open things to vindicate his own character, which indignant ſhame of having placed his confidence ſo unworthily would otherwiſe have made him conceal; and in this inſtance the world was not dazzled by ſucceſs, but directly paid his villainy with the infamy it deſerved.

As for the lady, faſhion made it neceſſary for her to put on all the mimickry of woe, in which ſhe perſiſted moſt decently for the uſual time, at the end of which ſhe found her huſband, that was to be, ſo ſlack in his addreſſes, that ſhe was obliged to court him, as ſuch an unſettled life was equally contrary to her intereſt and inclinations. This anſwered a double end. It gratified his vanity, (for he took care to make it known) and ſeemed to obviate the credit of the contract between them, ſhould it ever happen to be diſcovered. Accordingly he kept off a little longer; and at length conſented with the affected irreſolution of a man of the moſt delicate principles and ſenſe of honour.

As he only got a *legal* right by his marriage, to what he was already in poſſeſſion of, he ſoon grew tired of the ſtate, the circumſtances of which in his particular caſe could not be very pleaſing to any man. However, to avoid the evils of which he was moſt immediately afraid, he went to live in the country, where he admitted his wife to ſee nobody, but thoſe he approved,

and in company with himſelf. Nor was he ſatisfied that his utmoſt vigilance could prove effectual, as he had had experience of the looſeneſs of her principles, and her expertneſs in all the arts of intrigue.

Their ſituation, in theſe circumſtances, may be eaſily conceived. Continual ſuſpicions, quarrels, and recriminations aggravated their mutual diſlike to the moſt rancorous hatred, and made their lives ſuch a ſcene of miſery, that they themſelves looked upon it as a commencement of heaven's vengeance on their crimes; while all who knew them expected in horror, that they would make that vengeance ſtill more ſignally dreadful, by wreaking their hatred upon each other's lives, or their deſpair upon their own.

All the advantages, thus dearly earned, were an affluence diſguſting for want of power of enjoyment, except in an external pomp that only mocked the miſery within, and made the meanneſs it was deſigned to hide the more remarkable.

CHAP. XIV.

CHRYSAL's *maſter deſigns to ſet up a coach; but wants a material article, toward making a proper figure with it. He conſults with an* HERALD, *who gives him an elaborate diſſertation not the moſt pleaſing to him, on* COATS OF ARMS, *and the modern methods of making them, in which he unfolds many curious myſteries, and undertakes at laſt, on proper encouragement, to make him a gentleman.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice. Converſation between his new maſter, and an* ANTIQUARIAN. *Curious arguments, by which he proves the genuineneſs and importance of certain relicks of antiquity.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

IN this age of delicacy and refinement the firſt thing thought of in genteel life is *a carriage*, which is ſo indiſpenſibly neceſſary to procure reſpect, that no eminence

eminence in ſcience, no practice of virtue is held in eſteem where that is wanted. Senſible of this, my maſter reſolved to beſpeak one, the elegance and grandeur of which ſhould prove his taſte and magnificent ſpirit. One difficulty though perplexed him not a little in the deſign. This was his want of a *coat of arms* to decorate the outſide of it, and diſplay to the world his illuſtrious deſcent.

After much fruitleſs meditation on ſo important a ſubject, it occurred to him, that an *herald* muſt be the proper perſon to conſult with upon the beſt means of remedying this defect. Accordingly, he enquired for the moſt eminent in that way, and on the morning fixed for his attendance, prepared to receive him in ſuch a manner as he imagined could not fail to inſpire him with reſpect. He was lolling at breakfaſt in an elbow-chair; dreſſed in a morning-gown of green damaſk, with a red cap on his head, the cambrick lining of which was edged with a rich lace, that turned up over it, and crimſon velvet ſlippers on his feet, one of which was extended on a cuſhion of the ſame materials, to give him the appearance of the gout, a diſorder which he looked upon as an inconteſtible proof of his being ſprung from a good family, while his lady poured out his tea, and between every diſh read a paragraph in a news-paper to entertain him.

As ſoon as the *herald* was ſhewn in, my maſter caſt an eye upon his lady, and nodding majeſtically toward the door, ſhe withdrew, and left him to his buſineſs. After the uſual queſtions about the weather, and the news, my maſter at length entered upon the ſubject.

"I underſtand S—S—S—Sir," (ſaid he, faultering, and almoſt bluſhing in ſpite of his aſſurance) "that "you have great ſkill in heraldry; and therefore de-"ſired to ſee you to conſult about my *c—c—c—coat* "*of arms.*"

"I do preſume, Sir," (anſwered the herald with an air of importance) "to have ſome knowledge, in that "myſterious and ſublime ſcience, and hope I ſhall not "wrong the character you have received of me, in "any thing in which you are pleaſed to employ me. "Hem! ahem! Pray, Sir, what may be the nature of

"your

" your preſent commands? I ſuppoſe you want to " introduce into your own *coat*, the *bearing* of ſome " branch of your family, which is fallen to you. " There is nothing in the world eaſier to be done, " that is by one, who, as I ſaid before, underſtands " the ſcience. It is only dividing *the field* properly, " and taking care that the *blazoning* of the different " *quarterings*, of which all good families gain many " in a long courſe of deſcents, may not be wrongly " blended, as *colour upon colour, or metal upon metal*, " which you muſt know is *falſe heraldry*; though I " beg pardon, your *blazoning* is moſt likely in *preci-* " *ous ſtones*, the peculiar emblems of nobility with " us. But that makes no difference, as I will con- " vince you, if you pleaſe to let me ſee your arms."

" Sir," (replied my maſter, ſtill more confounded by this jargon) " that is not what I want. I would " have an entire *n—n—new coat*."———

" O! I underſtand you, Sir! *you are the firſt of* " *your family*; and want to *make arms* for yourſelf, " as none of your anceſtors have left you any! Why, " Sir, that too may be done; but it muſt be with " judgment, and care, as I ſaid before, for fear of " interfering with the *arms* of any other family. But " you may truſt me for that, Sir! Half the *arms* you " ſee cut ſuch a figure about the town are of my de- " viſing. *The king may make lords and knights of* " *whom he pleaſes, but it is the herald muſt make them* " *gentlemen*; for what is any man without *a coat of* " *arms?* Pray, Sir, what is your name? And of " what profeſſion was your father?"——

" Wh——wh——why do you aſk, Sir? I ſuppoſe " there cannot be any thing material to your pur- " poſe in them?"———

" Pardon me, good Sir, they are material, very " material. A name, eſpecially if it conſiſts of many " ſyllables, often gives an excellent hint; for much " as your modern wits may effect to deſpiſe the myſ- " terious learning of *Rebus*'s, wiſer antiquity held it " in high repute, as you muſt have obſerved from the " many illuſtrious *coats of arms* taken entirely from the " name: and then knowledge of the profeſſion of a

" gentleman's

" gentleman's father is abſolutely neceſſary for many " reaſons. There are profeſſions, the implements of " which are never *drop'd*, becauſe the profeſſions " themſelves are reckoned honourable, as there alſo " are others, nothing relating to which is ever *borne*, " for the contrary reaſon. The ſon of a general or " admiral, for inſtance, will have his *arms* charged " with implements of war; but *the ſon of a man who* " *kept a chandler's ſhop* will never *bear* a lump of " butter, or a bunch of candles, nor *the ſon of a* " *taylor*, a pair of ſciſſars or a thimble; for theſe " would at once betray what is deſigned to be hid; " and therefore it is abſolutely neceſſary that I. " ſhould be informed of theſe particulars."——

" B—b—b— but Sir, can you not ſtrike out ſome- " thing entirely new, without alluding to any name, " or profeſſion at all? I am willing to pay you well " for your trouble, only let me have ſomething ele- " gant and grand."

" I underſtand you, Sir, I'll engage to pleaſe you. " I'll *quarter you the coat of a crown'd head* in an in- " ſtant, without any body's being able to ſay a word " againſt it. Leave it to me, and I'll engage to " pleaſe you; not the richeſt *contractor* or *Nabob* of " them all ſhall make ſuch a figure."——

" And pray, Sir, what is your price, for a job of " this kind?"—" Price, Sir, I never make bargains! " let common mechanics do that! Gentlemen al- " ways make me a preſent, when they beſpeak their " honours; and according to the value of that, my " invention is either high or low.

" Well, Sir, it ſhan't ſink on that account now. " Here are ten guineas for you, as an earneſt of what " I will give, if I like your work, when it is done."—

" Sir, you may depend on having *the higheſt arms* " of any man in the kingdom. Your generoſity ſhews " that you ought to be a gentleman; and it ſhall be " my fault if I don't make you one, in the ſight of " the world."—— Saying this, he took his leave, " *when I was heartily glad to go with him, being* " *part of the price paid upon this occaſion for the mak-* " *ing of a gentleman*"

As

As ſoon as my *new* maſter went home, he retired to his cloſet, and taking out the money he had juſt received, "Hah! hah! hah! no bad price for a little "*daubing!*" (ſaid he laughing, and chinking the purſe.) "I wonder the fellow could be ſuch an aſs "as to think that any thing in my power to do could "make him paſs for a gentleman! But let him have "his way; his folly is my gain; and it is no more "than juſtice, that one who has cheated the world "ſo long ſhould cheat himſelf at laſt, and ſacrifice "the earnings of villainy to vanity! But hold! this "is about the time my *Antiquarian* was to come. "Let me ſee thoſe *ancient manuſcripts*, and *inſcriptions which I had done laſt week!* upon my life, "they look very well. The *canker* upon this copper, and the *ſmoke* upon this parchment are as natural as if they were the work of a thouſand years; "and theſe *ſcrawls* might paſs even for the *ſpells* of "the witch of *Endor*, they have ſo little likeneſs to "any marks made to convey thought, at this time. "He is a very pretty fellow, that did them, and "deſerves encouragement."

Juſt as he ſaid this, the perſon he expected came, and entering without ceremony upon his buſineſs, "I "called upon you, Sir, (ſaid he) to ſee thoſe things "you mentioned to me. If they are really what you "deſcribe, we ſhall not differ about the price, high "as it is."

"I hope, Sir," (anſwered my maſter) you have not "ſo mean an opinion of my judgment, as to imagine "I could ever think of impoſing upon you. No, "Sir! I know that to be impoſſible; even if I could "be baſe enough to attempt it; and therefore would "not mention any thing to you; that could admit of "the leaſt doubt to a perſon of your profound learning. As to the price, I could have had much more "ſince I ſaw you; but I thought it but juſtice to "their merit to offer them firſt to you, as there is "no other collection in the kingdom worthy of them, "and I am above riſing in a demand I have once "made, though infinitely ſhort of their intrinſick value, as you will be convinced, the moment you ſee

"them.

" them. Here, Sir, is the *manuſcript*, which I had " the good fortune to meet with as I was rumaging " among ſome old records in our office, that had " never been ſtirred ſince the reign of *Henry the* " *Eighth*. The paper in which it was wrapped was " ſo decayed, that it mouldered quite away, ſo imme- " diately upon its coming into the open air, that I had " ſcarce time to read the contents, which were *that* " *this parchment had been found in the tomb of Thomas* " *a Becket, upon the breaking up of his ſhrine at the* " *reformation*, and was laid up there, on account of " its antiquity. That it muſt have been very ancient, " even before his time, the colour and decay of the " parchment would ſufficiently prove, were there not " other proofs ſtill more convincing to ſuch as have " judgment to comprehend them. The ſhape of the " letter ſhews its age. The manner of writing, as " appears by comparing it with other ancient manu- " ſcripts, was introduced in the beginning of the ſe- " cond century of the Chriſtian Æra, and quite drop- " ped by the middle of the third. Within that pe- " riod therefore it muſt have been written. Its anti- " quity being thus fixed, the purport of it is next to " be conſidered; and of that and its importance, " there can be no juſt room to doubt. This *ſpot* at " the bottom of the parchment, though ſo much de- " faced by time, bears a ſtrong reſemblance to the " impreſſion of a *mitre*, and thereby proves that ſome " biſhop was the author of what was written over " it, into which theſe four letters, M—A—T—H, " fortunately ſo very plain, give the cleareſt light; " for as they muſt have been part of the word ARI- " MATHEA, they prove that the opinion of *Joſeph of* " *Armithea*'s having firſt preached the Goſpel in *Bri-* " *tain*, was known ſo early as in the ſecond century, " and ſo decide that long-conteſted point; as, who " can be ſuch an infidel as to doubt a thing given " thus, as I may ſay under the ſacred ſeal of the " *mitre*, and that ſo very near the time."

" Very true! but is it not as probable, that the " deſign of this writing was to refute that opinion, " as to confirm it?"

" My

" My good Sir, if you allow weight to ſuch trivial " objections as this, you give up all the knowledge " of an *Antiquarian*, which never amounts higher, " than to poſſible conjecture, without regard to pro- " bability even againſt him; for *conjectures*, ſuch as " this, *founded on effaced remains of antiquity, are of* " *much greater weight in the learned world, becauſe* " *they ſhew more learning than the plaineſt concluſions* " *drawn from evident and compleat records, as theſe* " *are obvious to any common perſon.* But why do I " mention theſe things to you, who underſtand them " ſo much better than I pretend to do."

" I believe I do, Sir, know ſomething of thoſe " matters; and was ſatisfied both of its antiquity, " and importance, at the firſt glance of my eye; " though I ſtarted that objection for mere amuſe- " ment. But where is the fragment? I ſhould be " glad to ſee that alſo."

" Here it is, Sir;" (anſwered my maſter, taking a bit of broken copper out of a box, in which it was carefully wrapped up in cotton) " This plate of cop- " per was torn in the manner you ſee, from the head of " a ſepulchral monument, on the top of mount *Libanus*, " by a perſon who had been ſent thither, by a cele- " brated Society, on purpoſe to ſeek for ſuch things; " and at his return made me a preſent of it, as the " moſt valuable acquiſition he had made, out of gra- " titude for my having helped him to the job. Ob- " ſerve this *canker*, Sir! Much as it has been rubbed " off in the carriage; the depth and colour of it ſhew " that it muſt have been ſome thouſands of years in " gathering. What the occaſion of ſetting it up was, " ſome particular circumſtances direct to a conjecture " ſufficiently probable. You ſee this *hole*, which the " canker has eaten almoſt through the copper, with " this *ſtroke* turning up over it. This certainly is " the remains of the figure of a lion, as is plain from " theſe two *tufts* in the middle, and at the end of the " ſtroke, which muſt have been the tail of it. Now " as the lion was the emblem of *Judah*, it cannot be " doubted but ſome great perſonage of that tribe muſt " have been buried, where this emblem was ſet up;

" a cir-

" a circumſtance, that ſo clearly proves the anti-
" quity of *coats of arms*, that I do not know how to
" think of parting with it, it affords ſuch an illuſ-
" tration to a treatiſe I am at this time engaged in
" writing, on that ſublime and difficult ſubject."

" Not part with it!" (replied the *Antiquarian*, returning it carefully into the box, and then cramming the box into his boſom) " you muſt get it firſt,
" my good friend, to part with. Hah! hah! hah!
" a very pretty jeſt truly! you offer a thing to ſale,
" and ſet a price upon it, and then you cannot part
" with it! a very pretty jeſt truly! Here is your
" your money, both for the *manuſcript*, and the
" *fragment*; and when you meet with any other ſuch
" precious remains of antiquity, I ſhall be obliged
" to you to let me have the preference. No body
" will give you a better price."

Saying this, he reached my maſter a bank-note, which he took with an air of diſſatisfaction; and while he was telling out change, " You do as you pleaſe
" with me, Sir, (ſaid he) this time; but the next, I
" ſhall be more upon my guard. I am glad, how-
" ever, that it goes into ſo noble a *collection* as your's,
" where it will have juſtice done to its merit."

" Aye, Sir!" (anſwered the *Antiquarian* with a ſmile of ſelf-complacency) " I have been at ſome
" pains and expence too, to make a *collection*; and
" have the ſatisfaction to think, that whenever I die,
" it will make as good a figure in a *ſale catalogue* as
" that of moſt of my cotemporaries. I ſhall leave
" proofs behind me, that I have not ſpent my life in
" vain. What would I not give to hear the character
" which an able *Auctioneer* will give of me, upon
" opening the ſale? I wiſh my good friend *Puff* may
" out-live me, to have the job. There is no man ſets
" forth the merit of any thing in ſuch happy terms.
" He has words at will, as they ſay. What an high
" opinion will he raiſe of my learning, taſte, and
" judgment? But that's right. You ſaid you wanted
" this *fragment*, for a particular occaſion! I am by no
" means averſe to obliging you. You are welcome to

" quote

" quote it, as in my *collection*, ſuppoſe in this, or ſome " ſuch manner, " *as appears* (proving what you have " advanced before) *by a moſt valuable and rare an-* " *tique fragment*, or whatever elſe you ſhall call it) " *in the moſt curious*, or *coſtly*, or *ineſtimable*, or *noble*, " (or perhaps all theſe) *collections of my late moſt learn-* " *ed, and judicious, and indefatigable, and munificent* " *friend*," or whatever other titles of the kind your " judgment and regard ſhall dictate to you."

" I am much obliged to you, for the favour;" (returned my maſter, ſcarce able to reſtrain his laughter) " and ſhall be ſure to avail myſelf of it, at " the proper time, as alſo to do it in a manner, " which however ſhort it may fall of your merit, will " yet teſtify my high and reſpectful ſenſe of it."— Saying this, he gave him the change of his note, *among which I was*, and ſent him away happy.

CHAP. XV.

A modeſt method of ſeeking fame. CHRYSAL's *maſter confirms himſelf in his reſolution to gratify an uncommon curioſity, by a great example. The judicious and learned manner, in which he claſſed and entered his new acquiſitions. Curious remark on the value of books. He goes to an auction where he makes an extraordinary purchaſe.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, for that of the Auctioneer. Specimen and effects of his new maſter's eloquence, learning and judgment.*

A MAN's ſpending his life and fortune, in buying up books of learning, and obſcure remains of antiquity, only to make a great ſale after his death, was a method of ſeeking fame more modeſt than I had hitherto met among mankind. As ſoon as my *new* maſter reached home, he went directly into his *Muſæum*, and taking out his rare purchaſes, ſtared at them for ſome time in a kind of ſtupid delight, till no

no longer able to contain it, "What an opinion (ſaid "he) will the world have of me, when all theſe "come to be ſhewn for ſale? I hope my worthy "friend *Puff* will live to do me juſtice! What if I "ſhould beg of him to give me a ſpecimen of the "manner in which he will ſet them out? He cannot "refuſe me that gratification, in return for all the "money he has taken from me, eſpecially as I have "told him, that I deſign he ſhall have the job. Such "a requeſt is not improper. It has the ſanction of "one of the greateſt names in antiquity to ſupport "it. *Cicero*, the great *Cicero*, deſired his friend the "hiſtorian to let him know what he intended to ſay "of him; and need I heſitate to follow his example? "Whatever has the authority of antiquity muſt be "right; and therefore I will go to him directly "about it——But hold! I muſt enter theſe articles "in my catalogue firſt."

Then taking down an huge folio richly bound, and inſcribed CATALOGUE, on the back and ſides, in capitals of gold, he ſat down to inſert this valuable addition to his treaſure, and opening the book with great deliberation, "What are the *heads* (ſaid he "under which they are to be claſſed? Let me ſee! "*Antiques!* no. That is for my *coins* and *buſts*, "and *urns*. What is the next? *Ancient manuſcripts*, "and *fragments!* Aye! theſe are they. Let me con- "ſider now what are the titles!"—Then laying the fore-finger of his right-hand upon the tip of his noſe, ſupporting his chin with his thumb, ſhutting his eyes, and leaning back in his chair, on the arm of which he reſted his elbow, "how unlucky it was" (reſumed he, after a long pauſe) "that he did not tell their "names! I was aſhamed to aſk him directly, though "I did as much, if he had minded me. But can't I "make them out from what he ſaid? *A very antique* "*manuſcript*—no. That will not do. *Antique* is for "works of art; *ancient* is the word here.——*A very* "*ancient manuſcript written by Thomas a Becket in* "*the ſecond century, and found in his tomb at the Re-* "*ſloration, proving that Joſeph of Arimathea was an* "*Engliſh biſhop.*——Yes. That is it. And then for

"the

" the *fragment*——*a very ancient*——no, *antique*. " *Antique* is the word for *fragments*, they are made " by art; *a very antique fragment torn from a monu-* " *ment on Mount Libanus, proving that some great* " *person was buried there*; *and that a lion was the* " *arms of Judah*.—Aye; th fe will do! I knew I " could make them out. This is juſt the ſubſtance " of what he ſaid, but in fewer and better words. " Titles ſhould be ſhort and pithy. *Multum in parvo*. " Much in a little compaſs. Let me alone for hitting " off a ſtriking title. I have not been an *Antiquarian* " ſo long for nothing."——Then conning them over twice or thrice to try how they ſounded, he entered them in his catalogue, and putting the book back into its place, ſat down to contemplate his own conſequence in the learned world.

But ſublime as this enjoyment was, his indefatigable induſtry would not permit him to indulge it long. " Hah!" (ſaid he, ſtarting, as upon ſudden recollection) " that's right! the ſale of thoſe *Chineſe cha-* " *racters*, brought over in the laſt fleet, comes on a- " bout this very time. It was quite out of my head; " and I would not have miſſed of them on any ac- " count. They'll make a capital article; for the " *Chineſe* taſte is coming into ſuch great *vogue*, that " I ſuppoſe we ſhall ſoon learn their language, though " I ſhould be ſorry to ſee that too, as it would " leſſen the value of my *Chineſe* books; for *books are* " *valued now the more for not being underſtood*, as I " know by experience, having laid out many a pound " in the purchaſe of ſuch as I underſtand no more of, " than if they were *Chineſe*. But let thoſe, who " know no other uſe of books but to read them, " buy only ſuch as they can read: I *collect* mine for " another purpoſe, and a noble *collection* I will have, " let it coſt me what it will; I care not whether I " die worth a groat beſide. The fame of that is " fortune enough for me."

Purſuant to this noble reſolution he went directly to the ſale, where he was ſo charmed with the *Auctioneer*'s learning and eloquence, that he out-bade every body, and carried off in triumph *the curious, the rare*,

rare, the inestimable key, into all the mysterious, the profound, the sublime wisdom of that prince of all philosophers, Legislators, and Hierarchs, the divine CON—FUT—SEE, *and all his learned and judicious Disciples and Commentators,* THE CHINESE CHARACTERS, in paying for which, *I changed his service, for that of the Auctioneer.*

My new master proceeded for the remainder of the sale, to display his abilities in the same extraordinary manner; giving circumstantial accounts of things he knew nothing of; and bestowing the most extravagant praises for excellencies of his own invention, often inconsistent with each other, and with the subject to which they were ignorantly attributed, with a confidence that bore down doubt, and gained implicit credit with the gaping croud, in defiance to reason, and their very senses, till he led them on by little and little, to pay the price of such an imaginary value. But this will be best explained by an instance that happened just after I came into his possession.

The sale of that day consisted *nominally* of the *collection* of a *Cheesmonger* lately deceased, who had been *an eminent Antiquarian*, and *Virtuoso*. I say nominally; because though the whole went under his name, scarce the tenth part of it had ever been his, the rest, being *made up* from every quarter by my master. Among the *rare, curious,* and *costly* articles exhibited on this occasion, was a vessel of *Porcelaine*, of an uncommon shape, ornamented with several odd and uncouth representations of animals, and somes figures, not unlike the characters of a language.

"Gentlemen," (said my master, as soon as this was produced) "You here see one of the rarest, and "most valuable remains of antiquity, ever brought "into *Europe*. This *here* superb vase was the iden- "tical cup, out of which the sublime emperors of "*China* for numberless ages drank the consecrated "wine on the day of their coronation. It was found, "gentlemen, among the treasures of the Great *Mo-* "*gul* by *Thomas Couli Can*, when he dethroned that "*there* prince, out of the wreck of whose spoils, "when they were lost in passing the river *of the* "*Indies*,

" *Indies*, it was ſaved by a *Chineſe Nabob*, from " whom it was afterwards taken, together with his " crown, by that there *heaven-born* general, who " made thoſe effeminate, and daſtardly *Indians* tremble " at the name of an *Engliſhman*, and given by him as " a precious token of his eſteem, to the deceaſed, his " very learned, and curious friend. This, Gentlemen, " is, in few words, the whole, full and true account " of this here ineſtimable curioſity, every word of " which can be proved by unqueſtionable authority. " As for the vaſe itſelf, excluſive of all this, its own " merits give it ſufficient value. Obſerve theſe here " figures, gentlemen; they are *Egyptian Hieroglyphicks* " denoting the duties of a ſovereign, which thoſe wiſe " *Mandarines* always take care to inſtruct their em- " perors in. This here *lion*, for inſtance, ſignifies " that he muſt be courageous and valiant; this *fox*, " that he muſt be wiſe; and ſo on. But the moſt " extraordinary thing of all, gentlemen, is theſe here " characters. They are a *taliſman*, or *charm*, in- " vented by *Mahomet* to protect the owner of this cup " from the influence of evil ſpirits. I do not preſume, " gentlemen, to ſtand up for the virtue of ſuch things. " The notion of ſpirits, I am ſenſible, is much ex- " ploded; and the religion of *Mahomet* cried down " among us; but ſtill, gentlemen, without entering " into theſe here nice points, we all know that he " was a great man, and *lived a great while ago*, " which is ſufficient to make any thing that was his, " of great value to men of learning, who are above " prejudice in theſe matters. But beſide all this, " theſe here characters are of the greateſt impor- " tance, on another account; as they prove beyond " diſpute, that *the true method of writing the learn-* " *ed languages was without accents*, not one appear- " ing, as you ſee, gentlemen, in this moſt original, " and authentick relick of ancient learning, and ſo " put an end to that there controverſy, that has ſo " long puzzled the world. It were preſumption in " me, gentlemen, to attempt putting a value on a " thing that is invaluable. I will therefore ſet it up " at what you pleaſe, as you are the beſt judges.

" This

" This only I will make bold to ſay, that the beſt " judge of all will have it, as he will give moſt for " it; for too much it is impoſſible to give."

So juſt an account, and ſuch judicious praiſe, could not fail of effect. The *Virtuoſi* round him, ſatisfied that what he ſaid muſt be true, becauſe ſpoken with confidence, and above their comprehenſion, vied with each other for the poſſeſſion of ſo ineſtimable a treaſure, till they *raiſed* it to an height, at which they themſelves were ſurprized, as ſoon as the ſpirit of *bidding* began to cool, and they had time to reflect.

CHAP. XVI.

An unſavory accident ſtops him ſhort in his harangue. He turns off the jeſt, with another, and accounts learnedly for what has happened. The real cauſe, and conſequence of that accident. Reflections on auctioneering, and the cauſes of its ſucceſs.

THIS was the time, for which he always reſerved the higheſt flights of his eloquence, to raiſe that ſpirit again. Reſuming therefore his harangue, " You pauſe, gentlemen, (ſaid he) only to " conſider how much farther you may *riſe* with ſafety; " for it is impoſſible that perſons of your profound " taſte and judgment ſhould diſgrace them ſo much, " as to let ſuch a jewel *go* for ſo mere a trifle. Do " not take my word, gentlemen, for its value. I " may be miſtaken, but you cannot. Examine it " therefore yourſelves. Obſerve the beauty of theſe " here *unknown* figures! *read* theſe *unintelligible* " characters; and ſmell the aromatick odour which " the vaſe ſtill retains, and ever will retain, from the " quinteſſences of all the ſpices of the *Indies*, which " uſed to be mixed with the conſecrated wine. The " perfume is almoſt enough to revive the dead."

Saying

Saying this, he went to ſmell it himſelf to lead the way to the reſt, and putting the mouth of it to his noſe, without taking off the cover, that the fragrance ſhould not evaporate, as he raiſed his hand, a ſtream, that emitted a ſavour far from aromatick, guſhed out into his face, and filled his mouth, as well as noſe, with ſomething more ſubſtantial than perfume.

It is impoſſible to deſcribe his ſituation, at ſuch a diſgraceful accident. Surprize, ſhame, and loathing aggravated each other, and threw him into ſuch confuſion, as once in his life deprived him of utterance for ſome moments. As ſoon as he had emptied his mouth, and wiped his face, "Villain," (ſputtered he, to his ſervant) "how has this happened? Whom have "you let play me this baſe, malicious, low-liv'd "trick?"

"S—S—Sir," (anſwered the fellow, as well as his ſtruggle to ſuppreſs his laughter permitted him to ſpeak) "I know nothing of the matter. I never left "any one a moment alone among the things, but "them there ladies, who I told you ſent me out for "a glaſs of *Ratafia*, t'other morning, and how could "I have ſuſpected their doing ſuch a thing?

"*Ratafia!*" (replied my maſter, who had by this time recovered his aſſurance, and knew the beſt way to turn off one jeſt is by another) "*Gin*, you ſhould "ſay; for if I can judge by taſte, and ſmell, that "is their liquor. I ſuppoſe they did it on purpoſe "to revenge their ſex upon *Mahomet*, for taking away "their ſouls (I wiſh he had alſo taken away the "filthineſs of their diſpoſitions!) by defiling ſo cele-"brated a monument of his learning and ſkill, in this "naſty manner: Hah! hah! hah!——

The oddity of ſuch a thought naturally made the company join in his laugh; but could not ſo far wipe off the diſgrace which the defiled vaſe had ſuffered, as to make any more be offered for it, ſo that it was forced to be *knocked down* to the laſt *bidder*, at not much more than if it had been made of gold, at which the purchaſer and my maſter were equally mortified, though for different and with very unequal reaſons.

As

As for the cauſe of this misfortune, it was really what the ſervant ſaid. One of the ladies who came to view the curioſities having certain preſſing occaſions, feigned a pretence to ſend him out; and in the mean time made ſuch uſe of this vaſe, being the firſt conveniency that came to her hand, as overpowered the ſcent of ſome ſpices, which had been put into it for the purpoſe.

It was fortunate for my maſter, that this was the laſt article in the ſale of that day, as a ſpirit of ridicule could not be favourable to his buſineſs. As ſoon as the company was gone, he ſettled his accounts, and ſumming up the profits, "Why, this is pretty "well!" (ſaid he, rubbing his hands and ſhrugging up his ſhoulders) "this does pretty well! Though if "that damned accident had not happened, (turning "up his noſe, and ſpitting with loathing) it would "have been much better. The fools were in the "humour and wanted only to be kept up. Howe-"ver, I have not much right to complain upon the "whole. That there *Jordan* coſt me five ſhillings, "and I have ſold it for fifty pounds. Much good "may the judicious buyer make of his bargain. "This is the happineſs of a man's having his tongue "*well hung*. A mealy mouth will never do in my "buſineſs; which after all is the beſt going. I might "have ſtood freezing behind a counter this month, "and not make half this much. In the way of *fair* "*trade*, as it is called, people have their ſenſes about "them, and ſtand to examine before they buy, but "any trumpery will go off in this way."

I have obſerved your aſtoniſhment, at the eaſineſs with which my maſter ſucceeded in ſuch groſs impoſition; but the reaſon of it is obvious. All mankind have an ambition of diſtinguiſhing themſelves, one way or another; and generally chuſe that, in which they have the leaſt qualifications to entitle them to ſucceſs, in order to hide their own deficiency. The coward, for inſtance, affects valour; the block-head knowledge; and the illiterate tradeſman, who has made a fortune by plodding, or in ſome illiberal buſineſs, taſte and judgment in the abſtruſeſt purſuits of learned

curiosity, in which, as there is no fixed rule to judge by, caprice takes the direction, and opens an ample field for imposition.

As to the business of *auctioneering* in general, it owes the greatest part of that success with which my master was so pleased, to another cause. The desire of *buying bargains*, which governs every one who buys any thing, makes people croud to those places, where things are to be sold, not as in the regular course of trade, for what they appear to be worth, but for the most that can be got for them: and there emulation, dependance on each other's judgment, "*(those people know what they are doing, and would "not bid so much if it was not worth more")* and the *oratory* of the auctioneer lead them by insensible advances, as their spirits rise, to give prices which they never meant to give, when they began to *bid*. That great bargains are often got at such places is true, but that is chiefly in a particular branch of the business, the mystery of which will be explained to you.

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL's *master is visited by a* CONNOISSEUR, *to whom he gives a short receipt how to make his pictures sell, and makes some striking remarks on the disregard people shew for their families, which send his visiter away in a huff.*

MY master was interrupted in his pleasing meditations, by the entrance of a gentleman, the sight of whom promised him the greatest pleasure of carrying the subject of them into execution. After some judicious remarks on the taste of the town, and the present state of *virtue* in the course of which each liberally complimented the other, "Pray, Sir," (said the gentleman) "how do pictures sell this season?"

"Never

" Never better, Sir," (anſwered my maſter) " Pic-
" tures are every body's money now. A *good maſter*
" brings any thing; and what is more, I am convin-
" ced they will riſe ſtill higher, ſo that buyers have
" no time to loſe. I have a ſale next week, when
" you will ſee ſuch prices as will aſtoniſh you. There
" are ſome Things there that I know you will have,
" let them coſt what they will, they ſuit your fine
" collection ſo exactly."

" Why, as to that," (replied the gentleman) " my
" mind is a good deal changed. I have often taken
" it into my head lately to part with my pictures, and
" have therefore called upon you to deſire that you
" will come in the morning, and let me know what
" you think they are worth."

" Worth, Sir! they are worth a great deal of mo-
" ney; which there is not the leaſt danger but they
" will bring, if they are managed properly. There is
" more, Sir, in the management of a ſale, much more
" than moſt people dream of, I aſſure you."

" I am ſenſible of that, Sir; and alſo of your abili-
" ties in ſuch management, which you will have the
" beſt encouragement to exert on this occaſion, as I
" propoſe ſelling the whole to you together, if we can
" agree."——

This turn came ſo unexpected, that it ſtruck my maſter quite down of the mouth, as he was ſenſible that he had overſhot himſelf, and ſpoiled his market by ſaying ſo much: " It is very unlucky, Sir;" (anſwered he, changing his note directly) " that I did not
" know your intention ſooner. I could then have di-
" vided them properly among the ſeveral ſales of the
" ſeaſon; but it is now quite too late; this here one
" next week is the laſt; and the catalogues for that are
" all made out, and diſperſed, ſo that there is no poſ-
" ſibility of *ſlipping in* a ſingle article. Beſides, the
" buyers have laid out all their money."——

" Slipping in, Sir! I don't underſtand you. Do not
" you think my pictures are ſufficient both in number
" and value to make a ſale by themſelves? I am ſure
" I have more than I have once known you make noiſe
" enough about, *collections* in no reſpect equal to mine.

" There muſt be ſome myſtery in this, which I cannot " comprehend."

" Very true Sir! there are myſteries, as you ob- " ſerve, in all buſineſſes; and perhaps in none more " than our's."

" I am not enquiring into your myſteries. All I " deſire to know is, why after juſt telling me that " pictures never bore ſo high a price as at this time, " and that mine could not fail of bringing a great deal " of money, you ſhould ſo ſoon change your opi- " nion."———

" Pardon me, Sir, I have not changed my opinion " in the leaſt; and ſhall be very proud to ſerve you " to the beſt of my abilities, in the way of a ſale; " but there is a material reaſon, why I muſt beg to " be excuſed in buying them, to ſtand the hazard of " it myſelf."———

" I ſhould be glad to know what that reaſon can " be, for I muſt own I cannot conceive it."

" Why, Sir, it is a thing to be ſure that may ſeem " odd to you; but experience has taught us the truth " of it. In ſhort, Sir, it is your being alive."—

" How! my being alive! What difference can my " life or death make in the value of my pictures."

" A very great one, Sir, I aſſure you. In all the " courſe of my buſineſs, I never knew one inſtance " of a ſale's going *off* well, where the owner was " living. People conclude that a perſon parts with " pictures either through diſlike, or neceſſity. The " former, you know, depreciates them at once; nor " does the other much leſs; as people of faſhion de- " ſpiſe a man, and every thing belonging to him, the " moment it is known that he is in diſtreſs. Beſides, " an *Auctioneer's* tongue is *tied up* from ſaying any " thing of a perſon's taſte, and judgment, and all " that, while he is living, it ſounds ſo fulſome; and " you are ſenſible that a good character of the *col-* " *lector* often goes a great way in helping off a *col-* " *lection*."

" The beſt thing then, for a man to do on ſuch an " occaſion, I preſume, would be to ſhoot himſelf " through the head! Hah!"

" Hah!

"Hah! Hah! Hah! You are pleaſed to jeſt, Sir; "but to be ſure it would be of great advantage. Curioſity brings all the world upon thoſe occaſions, "and then a man has an opportunity of ſaying ſo many "things, as "*that the deceaſed would not take ten "times ſo much, if he were living*;" or, "*that the high "price he gave for it cauſed the diſtreſs that made him "kill himſelf*; or a thouſand other ſtriking things of "the kind. *I never have ſo much pleaſure as upon thoſe "occaſions*, they give a man ſo much room to ſhew "himſelf. Indeed, if gentlemen conſidered the thing "in time, more of them would take this method of "delivering themſelves and their families both from "diſtreſs, and not defer it till all is gone, and the "ſurvivors can make nothing by their death; but few "people take any care for their families now o'days. "It is a bold puſh to be ſure; though not ſo bad as *a "man's ſhooting himſelf to win a wager* neither. I "ſhould beg your pardon, Sir, for ſpeaking ſo freely, "but as I know it is not your caſe, you cannot take "offence; though even if I thought it was, I would "not preſume to recommend ſuch a thing for the "world. Every body is to judge for himſelf. I only "give you my opinion what effect it would have."

"I underſtand you very well, Sir," (anſwered the gentleman, who had much difficulty to hear him out) "And in return for your opinion will give you my ad"vice, which is to conſider better whom you ſpeak to "in this inſolent manner another time, for fear of re"ceiving ſuch chaſtiſement, as contempt alone pre"vents my giving you this moment.——On ſaying which words he turned about, and left the room.

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL's maſter receives an agreeable ſummons. His encomiums on the generoſity of merchants, an account of the way many of them acquire reputation for taſte and judgment. He meets the merchant, who conſults him on a different branch of his buſineſs, from that which he expected. CHRYSAL's *maſter, in order to encourage his cuſtomer, gives a large account of his own abilities, and opens ſome curious ſecrets in his buſineſs. A bargain is ſtruck to the mutual ſatisfaction of both parties; and* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice for that of the merchant.*

WELL as my maſter was accuſtomed to rebukes, there was ſomething in the nature of this which diſconcerted him ſo much that he had not power to make the gentleman any reply. But he was ſoon relieved from the trepidation into which it threw him, by a meſſage from an eminent merchant to meet him directly at a neighbouring tavern. "Aye," (ſaid he adjuſting his wig at the glaſs, and putting on his cloak) "this is the thing! There is ſome difference be-"tween treating with a good ſubſtantial citizen who "will mind what a man ſays, and your people of "faſhion, who fly into a rage forſooth, if they can't "have their own way in every thing. No people part "with their money ſo freely as merchants. They don't "ſtand higgling and criticizing like the others. All "they require is to be aſked a good price, and then "they think a thing muſt be good of courſe. Many a "time have I got five times more from a merchant, "than I dared to have aſked from a duke. I ſuppoſe "he wants to ſhew his taſte next week at the ſale; and "has ſent for me to tell him which are the beſt pieces, "and how much he may bid for them. He is not the "firſt citizen, whom my inſtructions have made paſs "for a man of taſte and judgment. I love ſuch pupils, "they pay ſo well for their learning; and that more

"ways

" ways than one; for they buy what no body elſe " would bid for; *it is only ſlipping a puffer or two of* " *quality* at them, *enough of whom come ſharking to* " *every ſale for that purpoſe only*, and they may be " raiſed to any price. No people part with their " money like merchants."

When he came to the tavern he found the merchant waiting for him. After the compliments common upon ſuch occaſions were politely interchanged, " I deſired " to ſee you" (ſaid the merchant, proceeding to buſineſs, tho' not without evident confuſion) " on an af- " fair that will convince you of my confidence in your " abilities and honour. Trade, as you know, has " been ſo dead ſome time paſt, that there is no get- " ting in a penny of money, without tearing people " to pieces. Now as I had rather ſuffer ſomething " myſelf, than oppreſs any honeſt man, till he can " bring his affairs about, I ſhould be glad to diſpoſe " of ſome parcel of goods, even under their value, " to raiſe money for preſent occaſions, that is, provi- " ded it can be done in ſuch a manner as not to be " known, as ſuch a thing might injure a man's credit."

" Dear Sir," (anſwered my maſter, whoſe heart leaped with joy at the mention of ſuch an affair) " never fear that; I'll engage to manage it ſo, that if " every one who knows you, were to watch, they'd " never even ſuſpect the leaſt of the matter. There is " nothing eaſier, nor more common in the way of " buſineſs; and it luckily happens, that I have the " fineſt opportunity at this very time, that ever I had " in my life. I have a large ſale under a commiſſion, " the very week after next, into which I can *hedge* a " thouſand or two with the greateſt eaſe and ſafety. " Aſſigners never take notice of ſuch things. We " underſtand one another better than that. Many a " worthy man have I enabled to hold his head above " water, for years, by this method. To be ſure, it " muſt have an end ſome time; but then a man ſtands " in fortune's way for a lucky hit, you know; and not " only that, but alſo makes ſure of ſo much good " living, in the mean time, and can be no worſe at the " laſt; and then when all comes to all, and there

" muſt be a *blow-up*, it gives him an opportunity of " ſecuring ſomething againſt a rainy day, as the ſay- " ing is. As for its being diſcovered there are ways " enough to prevent that, *It is but entering them as " ſold, and I'll find a buyer, that ſhall never be heard " more of.* Lord, Sir, if it was not for things of this " kind, our buſineſs would be nothing to what it is. " Half the ſales you ſee every day in the papers, are " made up in this manner."

" Well, Sir," (replied the merchant, who had liſtened to him, with attention, and ſeemed greatly affected at ſome part of what he ſaid) " I preſume you under- " ſtand your buſineſs, and as I have no doubt of your " honour, I ſhall leave the whole entirely to your ma- " nagement. Here is an account of the particulars, " which I want to diſpoſe of at this time. They are " in a private ware-houſe, whither I have had them " conveyed to be ready for the purpoſe, of which this " is the key; and here is a bill of ſale, which I will " execute directly as I have an occaſion for two thou- " ſand pounds this very evening. You ſee there is va- " lue, more than ſufficient for double that ſum, as " you will be a better judge when you ſee the goods, " but the reſt can *ſtand forward*, till they are diſ- " poſed of; and the account made up.——

" Really, Sir, I ſhould be extremely glad to ſerve " you, but I fear, I have not ſo much caſh by me. " However, if you pleaſe, I'll go with you, and look " at the goods; and then I'll ſtep home, and try " what I can do."

Accordingly away they went together to the ware- houſe, where my maſter, being ſatisfied with the va- lue of the goods, left the merchant, and hied him home directly with a joyful heart for the money.

" So!" (ſaid he, to himſelf, as he went along) " I thought what things would come to, in the end! " His coach, and country-houſe! his wife's routs; " and his own kept miſtreſs have made quick work " with him. I believe ſuch men muſt imagine the reſt " of the world to be blind, or they would never go on " at ſuch a rate. I ſuppoſe he's preparing for a place " in the *Gazette* to-morrow or next day. But that

" is

" is no affair of mine. I'll take care to make a ſafe " bargain for myſelf; and let him look to the reſt. " *I am not to ſwear for him.* Of all the buſineſs in " our way, I like this the beſt. A man can make " up what account he pleaſes, without danger of its " being diſputed with him. All here is ſnug and ſe- " cure. If I could but get jobs enough of this kind, " I'd let who would chaffer for *toys*, and *daubings* " with people of quality, who often *outſharp* us, in " ſpite of all our experience."

By this time he reached home, where he ſoon made up the money, with the help of that and the former day's ſale, without heſitating a moment at its not being his own, and taking with him proper perſons to *atteſt* his bargain, and *new locks* to make ſure of it, returned to the merchant, with whom he ſoon concluded every thing without ſcruple or delay on either ſide, and then paying him on the ſpot, in bank notes, and caſh *(among the latter of which I was)* ſent him away, as well ſatisfied, as he himſelf ſtaid behind.

CHAP. XIX.

Motive of CHRYSAL's *new maſter for making ſuch a bargain, with the many and great advantages a merchant may make of being in the houſe. A ſhort ſketch of an election. The curious method, which* CHRYSAL's *maſter took to evade the laws againſt bribery. He takes offence at the unreaſonable preſumption of his conſtituents, and reſolves to make the moſt of the bargain he has bought from them, which by a ſingular piece of management he propoſes to make cheaper than they think.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, for that of the idol of an inn. The conſequences of electioneering. Some account of* CHRYSAL's *new miſtreſs. He quits her ſervice, for a curious purpoſe. An expedient to prevent the ſale of poiſon for mind, and body.* CHRYSAL *again changes his ſervice.*

WHEN a man has fixed his mind upon gaining a particular end, he ſlights any inconveniencies

which may attend the means Though my *new* maſter was ſenſible of the loſs he muſt ſuffer by his bargain, the proſpect of accompliſhing the purpoſe for which he made it, prevented its giving him any concern.

As ſoon as he got home, he gave orders to have his *equipage* made ready for a journey into the country, early next morning, and then retiring into his cloſet, for a few moments before he went to bed. "At "length" (ſaid he with a look of ſelf-congratulation) "I ſhall compaſs, what I have ſo long ſet my heart "upon. What an advantage is it to a merchant to be "in the houſe? I can laugh at *bailiffs* and *bankrupt-* "*cies*, for five years at leaſt; and in the mean time "I ſhall have a thouſand opportunities of making my "fortune by puſhing boldly *in the alley*, now that all "fears of the immediate conſequences are over, or "getting beneficial *contracts* with the government, "or at leaſt ſome genteel and profitable employment "under it. A merchant may make many advantages "of being in the houſe? Confound that prating fellow! "I was once afraid that he *ſmoaked* my deſign, he "came ſo near ſome unlucky circumſtances; but it "was above his *cut*. All his ſchemes are common, and "low-lived. This of mine is a maſter ſtroke. It is "*playing deep*, to be ſure! Fifteen hundred for my "ſeat; and what with other expences and the loſs "upon this night's work, as much more. It is playing "damn'd deep. But it is too late to think of that now. "I have *ſported* many thouſands upon a worſe chance "in my time. At any rate, I can laugh at *bailiffs* and "*bankruptcies*, for five years at leaſt; what an ad- "vantage it is to a merchant to be in the houſe."

Saying this he went to bed, where the advantages of being in the houſe ſtill ran ſo ſtrongly in his head, that he dreamed of nothing all night but *bullying creditors and cringing to miniſters*; doing *jobs*, and getting *contracts, places and penſions*.

In purſuance of his ſcheme, he ſet out next morning with a ſplendid retinue for the borough he had in view, where he managed matters with ſuch judgment and generoſity, keeping the whole town drunk from the

moment

moment he arrived, *according to the policy which permits a candidate to deprive his electors of their ſenſes, in order to enable them to judge better of his legiſlative abilities*, that he was elected in preference to a gentleman, the munificence of whoſe family had for many generations been the chief ſupport of the place, and who himſelf ſpent his ample fortune in hoſpitality, and beneficence in it, but diſdained to buy the votes of a venal crew on this occaſion.

As ſuch a competitor naturally had every man of worth and honour in his intereſt, it had been neceſſary for my maſter to proceed with the utmoſt care and circumſpection. Accordingly inſtead of *directly giving* his voters money, he *lent* them the prices ſtipulated, on the *ſecurity* of their *notes of hand*, payable in a certain time; an expedient, in which he had a further view, than barely evading the laws againſt ſuch practices.

Every thing being concluded, he was preparing to depart in triumph, when his *conſtituents* waited upon him in form, with certain *inſtructions* for executing the *truſt* they had *thus repoſed* in him. Though he looked upon this as ſuch a bare-faced piece of inſolence, that he ſcarce knew how to bear it, yet as he had not yet taken his ſeat, he received their *commands* with the politeſt *humility*, and promiſed the moſt faithful obedience to them. But they were no ſooner out of his ſight than he changed his note. "Impudent unreaſonable ſcoundrels! "(ſaid he to himſelf, giving vent to his indignation, as "he walked back and forward in the room) to talk "of having repoſed your truſt in me, and pretend to "give me inſtructions! I have *bought you*; and I will "*ſell you* to the beſt bidder, if he were the *devil*; and "a bad bargain he will have of you, if he buys you "as dear as I have. Though I have a ſtroke in my "head to bring myſelf home, that you little think of. "Thoſe notes of hand, which you thought I took "only to evade the law, ſhall be paid to the laſt far-"thing, if I am not *choſen* for nothing next election. "You ſhall find you have no fool to deal with."

Juſt as he ſaid this, he received notice that his coach was ready, and the landlord's daughter coming to wiſh him.

him a good journey, he ſaluted her politely, and ſlipping a couple of guineas *(one of which I was)* into her hand to buy a ribbon, left the houſe like a man of honour.

I have not entered particularly into the circumſtances of electioneering. They are too groſs to give pleaſure; and too well known to require repetition even to you. The effects, I mean immediately in the place, were ſuch as reaſon may ſuggeſt to you. The electors, inſtead of making any advantage of the price, for which they had thus literally ſold their conſciences, liberties and properties, continued to wallow in drunkenneſs, till every penny of it was ſpent, after which it was ſo long before they could ſettle rightly to work again, that it required a year's hard labour and ſtarving to repair what they ſuffered by this *bout* of exceſs and idleneſs.

My *new* miſtreſs was what is not unjuſtly called *the idol of an inn*. Endowed by nature with prettineſs enough to entitle her to flattery, and ſufficient *pertneſs* to make her a coquet, on her return from a *boarding-ſchool*, where her natural talents were ſo well improved by education, that ſhe was thought fit to try her fortune in the world, ſhe took her place in the *bar*, and flirted away with every gentleman that came to the houſe, in hopes of taking in ſome one of the number for marriage, as others in her way had done.

The firſt paſſion of the female heart is for *finery*, to the gratification of which girls ſeldom fail to apply all the money in their power. But though my miſtreſs was very far from being inſenſible to this paſſion, another ſcarce leſs powerful with the ſex, took place of it at this time, which was curioſity.

A young officer, who had lately been quartered in the houſe, and made warm addreſſes to her, had ſaid ſo many fine things in praiſe of a certain book, called *Memoirs of a Lady of Pleaſure*, that ſhe reſolved to ſee it, and for that purpoſe applied to a *circulating library* in the town, the keeper of which told her, it was ſo *ſcarce* and *valuable* a book, that he could not poſſibly procure it for her, under a guinea.

High

High as this price was, ſhe would have found means to raiſe it, ſo ſtrong was her curioſity, had not the hurry of the *election*, which juſt then came on, taken up all her time. But every obſtacle was now removed, and the very evening I came into her poſſeſſion, ſhe muffled herſelf up in one of the maid's cloaks, and went for it as ſoon as it was dark, *when I was the purchaſe of her extraordinary bargain.*

I ſee you are ſhocked at the diſhoneſty and wickedneſs of my *new* maſter for hiring out at ſuch a price, or indeed at any price at all, a book, whoſe obvious deſign (and which it is too well calculated to accompliſh) is to ſupplant every principle of virtue in the youthful mind. But the blame reſts not ſolely upon him. The excuſe, which the poet puts into the mouth of the apothecary for ſelling poiſon, that "*his poverty but not his will conſented*," may with equal juſtice be alledged in palliation of a poor bookſeller's vending impious or immoral books, the poiſon of the mind.

For this reaſon, as no penalty, however ſevere, may be ſufficient to combat that neceſſity, the moſt effectual way to prevent the vending of *either poiſon* would be abſolutely to prohibit all thoſe, whoſe poverty might ſubject them to ſuch temptation, from trading in *books* or *druggs* of any kind; as it is moſt certain, that if there were neither *poor apothecaries nor poor bookſellers*, the ſale of both vicious books and noxious drugs, would be much leſs extenſive than it is, if it could not be totally ſuppreſſed; there being very few of the human ſpecies ſo entirely given up to a reprobate ſenſe, as to murder either the ſoul or body of a fellow-creature, merely for the pleaſure of doing it.

It may be judged that I did not remain long in the ſervice of this maſter: The next morning after I came into his poſſeſſion, he came to *London*, where he laid out all the money he had in the purchaſe of a parcel of ſuch books, as he thought moſt likely to ſuit the taſte of his cuſtomers, without regard either to virtue, or religion, *on which occaſion I changed his ſervice for that of his bookſeller.*

CHAP.

" for a few minutes."—Saying which he gave him an handful of looſe papers, and left the room.

The firſt thing my maſter did, when left thus to form his judgment of a work of genius, was to *number* the pages, and *then the lines in a page or two*, by the time he had done which, the author returned, and taking the papers out of his hand, " Well, Sir," (ſaid he) " and what is the reſult of your judg-" ment ?"——

" Why really, Sir, (anſwered my maſter, after " ſome pauſe) I hardly know what to ſay. I have " *caſt off the copy*, and do not think it will *make* " *more than a ſhilling*, however pompouſly print-" ed."——

" What you think it will make is not the matter; " but what will you give me for it ? I ſell my works " by the *quality* not the *quantity*."——

" I do not doubt the quality of them in the leaſt; " but conſidering how much the trade is over-ſtock-" ed at preſent, and what a *mere drug* poetry has " long been, I am a good deal at a loſs what to of-" fer, as I ſhould be unwilling to give you or any " gentleman offence by ſeeming to undervalue your " works. What do you think of five guineas ? I do " not imagine that more can be given for ſo little; " nor, indeed ſhould I be fond of giving even that, " but in compliment to you: I have had full twice " as much for two, many a time."——

" Much good may your bargain do you, Sir! but " I will not take leſs than fifty for mine in compli-" ment to you, or any bookſeller alive; and ſo, Sir, " I deſire to know without more words (for I told " you before that your eloquence would be thrown " away upon me!) whether you will give that; as I " am in haſte to go to company, much more agreea-" ble to me than your's."

" What Sir! fifty guineas, for ſcarce five hundred " lines! ſuch a thing was never heard of in the " trade."——

" Confound your trade, and you together! Here " waiter! what's to pay ?"——

" But,

"But, dear Sir! why will you be in ſuch a hurry? "Can you not give yourſelf and me time to conſider "a little? Perhaps we might come nearer to each "other!"——

"I have told you before, and I repeat it to you "again, that I will have ſo much and that without "more words."——

"You are very peremptory, Sir; but *you know* "*your own value*; and therefore in hopes you will "let me have more for my money next time, I will "venture to give you your price now; though re- "ally if it was not for your *name* I could not poſſi- "bly do it; but to be ſure *that is worth a ſhilling* "*extraordinary I own.*"

"Which is twelve pence more than your's ever "will be, unleſs to the *Ordinary of Newgate.* But "come give me the money! I want to go to my "company."

"Well, Sir, this is an haſty bargain; but I take it "upon your word; and don't doubt but there is me- "rit in it, to anſwer ſuch a price. Satire, Sir! keen "ſatire, and ſo plain, that *he who runs may read*, "as the ſaying is, is the thing now o'days. Where "there is any doubt, or difficulty in the application "it takes off the pleaſure from the generality of rea- "ders, who will ſcarce be ſatisfied with leſs than the "very name. That, Sir, is your great merit. Satire "muſt be perſonal, or it will never do."——

"Perſonal! that mine never ſhall be. *Vices*, not "*Perſons*; are the object of my ſatire, though where "I find the former, I never ſpare the latter, be the "rank and character of life what it will."

My maſter had by this time counted out the money, (*among which I was*) which the author took without telling over, and then went to his company, leaving the bookſeller ſcarcely more pleaſed with his bargain, than mortified at the cavalier treatment he had met in making it.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXI.

Some Account of the company, to which CHRYSAL's *new maſter went. His behaviour to a young female, who accoſted him in his way home. He takes her to a tavern for an uncommon purpoſe, where he treats her uncommonly, and goes home with her, from as uncommon a motive. Account of what he ſaw in her habitation, with the manner in which he behaved there. He takes another lodging for the whole family, where he leaves them abruptly, to ſave himſelf and them trouble.*

THE company to which my *new* maſter was in ſuch haſte to go, conſiſted of a few perſons, whom a ſimilarity of temper had linked in the cloſeſt intimacy. With theſe he ſpent the remainder of the evening, in a manner which few would diſlike, tho' few ſtill could approve it; the ſpirited wit, and livelineſs of their converſation gilded the groſſeſt debaucheries; at the ſame time, that the rectitude and ſublimity of their ſentiments, whenever their hearts could find opportunity to ſpeak, made the vices of their practice ſtill more horrible by the contraſt.

They *broke* not up as it might be imagined, till nature ſunk under their exceſſes, when my maſter, as he ſtaggered home, was accoſted by a female, who had ſomething in her air and manner ſo different from thoſe *out caſt*, of humanity, who offer themſelves to caſual proſtitution in the ſtreets, that his curioſity was ſtruck, and he ſtopped to take more particular notice of her. She appeared to be about fifteen. Her figure was elegant, and her features regular; but want had ſicklied o'er their beauty; and all the horrors of deſpair gloomed through the languid ſmile ſhe forced, when ſhe addreſſed him.

The ſigh of diſtreſs, which never ſtruck his ear without affecting his heart, came with double force from

from ſuch an object. He viewed her with ſilent compaſſion for ſome moments; and reaching her a piece of gold, bade her go home, and ſhelter herſelf from the inclemencies of the night, at ſo late an hour. Her ſurpriſe and joy at ſuch unexpected charity overpowered her. She dropped upon her knees, in the wet and dirt of the ſtreet, and raiſing her hands and eyes towards heaven, remained in that poſture for ſome moments, unable to give utterance to the gratitude that filled her heart.

Such a ſight was more expreſſive than all the powers of eloquence. He raiſed her tenderly from the ground, and ſoothing her with words of comfort, offered to conduct her to ſome place, where ſhe might get that refreſhment of which ſhe appeared to be in too great want. "O! Sir," (ſaid ſhe, preſſing the hand that had raiſed her, with her cold trembling lips) "my deliverer, ſent by heaven to ſave me from "deſpair, let me not think of taking refreſhment "myſelf, till I have firſt procured it for thoſe, "whoſe greater wants I feel ten thouſand times more "ſeverely than my own."

"Who can they be? (interrupted he with anxi-"ous impatience) Can humanity feel greater wants, "than thoſe under which you are ſinking?"

"My father" (exclaimed ſhe burſting into tears) "languiſhing under infirmities, acquired in the ſer-"vice of his country; my mother worn out with "attending on him, and both periſhing for want, "(heaven grant they are not already dead!) toge-"ther with two infant brothers, inſenſible of the "cauſe of their diſtreſs, and crying to them for a "morſel of bread, which it is not in their power to "give."

"Where can ſuch a ſcene of wretchedneſs be hid-"den from relief? I'll go with you myſelf directly! "but ſtop! let us firſt procure ſome comfortable "nouriſhment from ſome of the houſes, which are "kept open at this late hour, for a very different pur-"poſe. Come with me! we have no time to loſe."

——With theſe words, he went directly to a tavern, and enquiring what victuals were dreſſed in the houſe,

loaded

loaded her with as much as ſhe could carry of the beſt, and putting a couple of bottles of wine in his own pocket, walked with her to her habitation, which was in a blind alley, happily for her, not very far diſtant, as weakneſs together with the conflict of paſſions ſtruggling in her heart, made her ſcarce able to go.

When they came to the door, ſhe would have gone up firſt for a light, but he was reſolved to accompany her, that he might ſee the whole ſcene in its genuine colours. He therefore followed her up to the top of the houſe, where opening the door of the garret, ſhe diſcovered to him ſuch a ſcene of miſery, as ſtruck him with aſtoniſhment. By the light of a lamp, that glimmered in the fireleſs chimney, he ſaw lying on a bare bedſtead, without any other covering than the relicks of their own rags, a man, a woman, and two children, ſhuddering with cold, though huddled together to ſhare the little warmth, which exhauſted nature ſtill ſupplied them with.

While he ſtood gazing in horror at ſuch complicated wretchedneſs, his conductreſs ran to the bed-ſide, and falling on her knees, "O! Sir! Madam! (exclaimed ſhe in rapture) "Ariſe! I have got relief from an angel of heaven!"——

"Take care! (anſwered a voice, the hollow trembling of which was ſharpened with indignation) take care it is not from a fiend of hell, who has taken advantage of your diſtreſs to tempt you to ruin! for with whom elſe could you be till this time of night? But know, wretched girl, that I will never eat the earnings of vice and infamy. A few hours will put an end to my miſeries, which have received the only poſſible addition, by this your folly."

"He muſt be ſuch indeed (interrupted my maſter, ſtill more ſtruck with ſentiments ſo uncommon in ſuch a ſituation) who could think of tempting her in ſuch circumſtances to any folly. I will withdraw, while you ariſe, and then we will conſult what can be ſooneſt done to alleviate a diſtreſs, of which you appear ſo undeſerving."——While he ſaid this, he took the wine out of his pockets, and giving

giving it to the daughter, went directly down ſtairs, without waiting for a reply, and walking back and forward in the ſtreet for ſome time, enjoyed the ſublimeſt pleaſure the human heart is capable of, in conſidering how he had relieved, and ſhould farther relieve, the ſufferings of objects ſo worthy of relief.

By the time he thought they might have learned from their daughter the circumſtances of her meeting with me, and taken ſome nouriſhment, he returned to them, when the moment he entered the room, the whole family fell upon their knees to thank him. Such humiliation was more than he could bear. He raiſed them, one by one, as faſt as he could, and taking the father's hand, "Gracious God!" (ſaid he) "can a ſenſe of humanity be ſuch an uncommon "thing among creatures, who call themſelves human, "that ſo poor an exertion of it ſhould be thought "deſerving of a return, proper to be made only to "heaven? Oppreſs me not, Sir, I conjure you, with "the mention of what it would have been a crime, "I could never have forgiven myſelf, to have known "I had not done. It is too late to think of leaving "this place before to-morrow, when I will provide "a better, if there is not any to which you chuſe "particularly to go. I am not rich; but thank hea-"ven, that it has bleſſed me with ability, and incli-"nation to afford ſuch aſſiſtance as may be immediate-"ly neceſſary to you, till means may be thought of "for doing more."

"O, Sir," (anſwered the mother) "well might "my daughter call you an angel of heaven! You "know not from what miſery you have already re-"lieved.——

"Nor will I know more of it at this time, (inter-"rupted my maſter) than that which I too plainly "ſee. I will leave you now to your reſt, and return "as ſoon as it is day."

"Speak not of leaving us, Sir, (exclaimed the "daughter, who was afraid that if he ſhould go away, "he might not return) what reſt can we take, in ſo "ſhort a time? Leave us not, I beſeech you! leave "us not in this place!"

"Ceaſe

" Ceaſe, my child!" (interrupted the father) " nor " preſs your benefactor to continue in a ſcene of miſe- " ry, that muſt give pain to his humane heart."——

" If my ſtaying will not give you pain" (anſwered my maſter) " I will moſt willingly ſtay; but it muſt be on " condition that our converſation points entirely for- " ward to happier days. There will be time enough " hereafter to look back."——

Saying this, he ſat down on the bed-ſide (for other ſeat the apartment afforded none) between the huſband and wife, with whom he ſpent the little remainder of the night, in ſuch diſcourſe, as he thought moſt likely to divert their attention from their preſent miſery, and inſpire their minds with better hopes, while the children, all but the daughter who hung upon his words, comforted at heart with a better meal, than they had long taſted, fell faſt aſleep, as they leaned their heads upon their mother's lap.

As ſoon as it was day, " Now, Madam" (ſaid my maſter, addreſſing himſelf to the mother) " I will go, and " provide a place for your reception, as you ſay all " places are alike to you. In the mean time accept of " this trifle" (giving her ten guineas) " to provide ſuch " neceſſaries, as you may indiſpenſibly want before " you remove. When you are ſettled, we will ſee " what further can be done. I ſhall be back with you " within theſe three hours at moſt."

For ſuch beneficence there was no poſſibility of returning thanks; but their hearts ſpoke through their eyes, in a language ſufficiently intelligible to his. Departing directly to ſave both himſelf and them the pain of purſuing a converſation that grew too diſtreſsful, he went without regard to change of dreſs or appearance, to look for a proper lodging for them, where he laid in ſuch proviſions of every kind, as he knew they muſt immediately want. This care employed him till the time he had promiſed to return, when he found ſuch an alteration in the looks and appearance of them all, as gave his heart delight.

" You ſee, Sir," (ſaid the mother, as ſoon as he entered) " the effects of your bounty; but do not " think that vanity has made us abuſe it. Theſe " cloaths,

" cloaths, what we could raiſe on which has for ſome " time been our ſole ſupport, were the purchaſe of " happier times; and were now *redeemed* for much " leſs than we muſt have given for the worſt we could " buy.——

" Dear Madam" (interrupted my maſter, taking her hand reſpectfully) " mention not any thing of the kind " to me, I beſeech you. You will ſoon ſee ſuch times " again." Then turning to the huſband, " I have taken " a lodging, Sir;" (continued he) " it is convenient, " but not large, as I imagined would be your choice. I " will call a coach to take us to it directly. If there " are any demands here let the people of the houſe " be called up, and they ſhall be paid. I will be your " purſe bearer for the preſent."

" No, Sir" (replied the huſband) " there are not any. " You have enabled us to diſcharge all demands upon " us. People in our circumſtances, cannot find credit, " becauſe they want it."

My maſter would then have gone for a coach, but the daughter inſiſted on ſaving him that trouble; upon which he put the whole family into it, and walked away before them to their new lodging. It is impoſſible to deſcribe what theſe poor people felt, when they ſaw the proviſion he had made for their reception. The father, in particular, could not bear it, but ſinking into a chair, " This is too much!" (ſaid he, as ſoon as a flood of tears had given vent to the fullneſs of of his heart) " This is too much. Support me, gra- " cious heaven, who has ſent this beſt of men to my " relief, ſupport me under the weight of obligations, " which the preſervation of theſe alone" (looking round upon his wife and children) " could induce me to " accept."——Then addreſſing himſelf to my maſter, " My heart is not unthankful" (continued he) " but " gratitude in ſuch exceſs as mine, where there is no " proſpect of ever making a return, is the ſevereſt " pain."

My maſter, who ſought none, attempted often to give the converſation another turn; but finding that they could ſpeak or think of nothing elſe as yet, he took

took his leave, promiſing to come the next day, when their minds ſhould be better ſettled, to conſult what more was in his power to ſerve them, having firſt privately taken an opportunity to ſlip a couple of guineas into the daughter's hand, to avoid putting the delicacy of her father and mother to farther pain.

END OF THE FIRST BOOK.

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

BOOK THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL gives ſome account of his maſter. Reaſon of his having been bred to, and miſcarried in a particular profeſſion. Intereſting remarks on the different kinds of merit neceſſary to eminence in different profeſſions, confirmed by ſtriking inſtances of their ſucceſs in each. Natural conſequence of his being forced into a profeſſion againſt his inclination. He is compelled by diſtreſs to exert his abilities. Contradiction in his character, and the particular turn of his works accounted for. He viſits his new family. Affecting ſtory of an officer.

FATIGUED in mind and body, from the debauch of the evening before, and the height to which his tendereſt paſſions had been wound up by ſuch a

moving ſcene, my maſter went directly home, and throwing himſelf on the bed, ſlept till next morning, without diſturbance from pain or reflection.

The contradictions, which I had ſeen in his character, prompted my curioſity to take this opportunity of looking back to his paſt life, to try if in the occurrences of that I could trace their cauſe. Born in the middle rank of life, his parents were induced by the dawnings of uncommon genius, which he diſcovered in his earlieſt youth, to give him ſuch an education, as might enable him to make that figure in ſome of the learned profeſſions, for which paternal fondneſs flattered them, that nature had deſigned him.

But however greatly he profited by his education, the end propoſed by it was far from being pleaſing to his inclinations, which the vigour of his mind, and body, turned to more active ſcenes. For this reaſon, when he was to quit the purſuits of general learning for thoſe of ſome particular profeſſion, his ardour cooled, and he entirely loſt that ſpirit of emulative ambition, which alone can enable a man to arrive at eminence.

Such a falling-off could not eſcape the anxious obſervation of his friends, but as it was not in their power either to remedy it, or gratify his inclination in any other way, all they could do was to enter him into the ſervice of religion, a profeſſion in which though the greateſt abilities and application of the human mind, are evidently and indiſpenſibly neceſſary, yet by the perverſion of man, the leaſt are required.

You ſeem ſhocked at the ſeverity of this remark; but a moment's reflection will open to you the reaſon upon which it is founded. In every other profeſſion, ſucceſs depends upon an opinion of that knowledge, which is called *merit* in it, becauſe mankind ſee the neceſſity of ſuch merit to attain the object of the profeſſion. But in the church, the caſe is quite different. Every man thinks that he knows enough of religion to ſerve his own turn, and therefore gives himſelf no trouble about the knowledge of thoſe, who profeſs it, as he concludes that knowledge can be of no ſervice to him; and therefore *ſucceſs in the church depends not on a*

general

general opinion of merit, but on particular favour, which for the reaſon given before, is not the neceſſary conſequence of ſuch merit. An *attorney* or *ſurgeon*, for inſtance, who is not thought to have ſome merit in his profeſſion, will never be employed; but let him by any means get into the church, and curry favour with thoſe in power, and he may riſe to the firſt dignities of it, though he has no more merit in this profeſſion, than he had in that, which he was forced to quit for want of bread. And this is the reaſon, why *they who have leaſt abilities for any profeſſion are packed into this*; *and* why, *they again, who have the leaſt of theſe, are generally moſt ſucceſsful in it*; as conſciouſneſs of their want of merit makes them take moſt pains to gain favour.

The conſequence of his entering into ſuch a profeſſion againſt inclination is obvious. An indignant ſenſe of his own natural ſuperiority to his ſuperiors in ſtation, made him fall into the too common error of arguing from the *abuſe*, againſt the *uſe*, and hold in contempt not only them, but alſo the very profeſſion itſelf, in which they could have ſuch ſucceſs, and in which neceſſity alone obliged him to continue. He diſdained to apply abilities, which he thought above the end! He neglected duties, which he ſaw abuſed; and at length ſunk into a ſtate of liſtleſs indifference, in which he would have died in obſcurity, had not diſtreſs rouzed him, and extorted an exertion of his abilities, which a mind ſoured by diſappointment of its earlieſt hopes, and by domeſtick unhappineſs after, turned to *ſatyre*, with an aſperity and ſtrength, that made vice tremble in the boſom of the great, and folly hide her head in the higheſt places.

As this domeſtick unhappineſs was the immediate cauſe of thoſe parts of his conduct, which contradicted the general tenour of his character, juſtice requires that ſome account ſhould be given of it. In the capricious levity of youth, he fixed his inclinations on a female, who had no other recommendation beſide beauty. Prudence would have forbidden a match, in which there was ſo little proſpect of happineſs, but men of great abilities too often think it beneath them

" ears * ; and therefore, as it was neceſſary for me, " to make my errand known, I never could obtain " acceſs to him.

" The diſtreſs of this diſappointment was ſtill far- " ther heigthened by the *delays* in the diſcharge of that " *half-pay*, which was now my only ſupport; and the " *draw-backs* it was ſubject to from the *fees of office*, " even when it ſhould come to be paid, which were " ſuch, that when I attempted to mortgage it, the " wretch's laſt reſource to put off ſtarving as long as " he can, what I could get from thoſe *vultures*, who " fatten upon the ſufferings of a ſoldier, was ſcarce " ſufficient to ſatisfy our preſent wants. How then " could I look forward for a family, dearer to me than " life? What could ſupport reſolution, when hope, " was gone? Mine was unequal to the tryal; and " I was beginning to meditate on putting an end to a " life of ſuch miſery, without conſidering that the " ſufferings of thoſe for whom I felt ſo much more " than for myſelf, muſt be ſtill made heavier by ſuch " a baſe deſertion of them, when heaven in its mercy " viſited my family with a violent fever, which freed " me from farther fears for the future welfare of my " three eldeſt ſons, and with difficulty ſpared the two, " whom you ſee before you. O! my poor boys! " happier! thrice happier than us, whom you left be- " hind! Excuſe this weakneſs, Sir! nature will force " the involuntary tear in ſpite of reaſon; for were " they not the children of my love?

" During their illneſs, I loſt every other care in my " attendance upon them; nor omitted any poſſible " means to preſerve lives, for which my fears foreboded " nothing but unhappineſs; but though their deaths " freed me from a part of thoſe fears, they left a " melancholy void in my heart, which was more " painful, if poſſible, than any fear. But I was not " long ſenſible of that pain. My children were ſcarce " laid in the grave, when the fever ſeized myſelf " with

* *This reflection,* NOTORIOUSLY SO GROUNDLESS, *is alone ſufficient to vindicate the author from any allu- " to preſent times.*

" with ſuch violence, that I ſoon loſt my ſenſes, nor " recovered them for above a month; and then only " to feel the greateſt wretchedneſs, that was ever " heaped upon human creature.

" The expence of my children's, and my own illneſs, " had not only exhauſted all the money I had raiſed " on the anticipation of my half-pay, but alſo obliged " my wife to mortgage ſeveral of our beſt effects. " Such a reſource never eſcapes the watchful eyes of " people who keep lodging houſes. Our landlady no " ſooner perceived it, than ſhe ſeized upon the reſt, " and then turned us out, the moment I could be re- " moved without inſtant death.

" In this ſituation, I muſt have periſhed in the ſtreet, " had not a poor woman, whom my wife had been " obliged to call in to her aſſiſtance when I ſickened, " ſhared with us her habitation, in which you found " us, as ſhe alſo did the earnings of her daily labour, " till a chairman, who was carrying a beau to a ball, " threw her down with ſuch violence, for not making " haſte enough out of his way, that ſhe broke her " leg, and was obliged to be taken to an hoſpital.

" From that time we ſupported life by mortgaging " the few cloaths we had brought on our backs, " without any ray of hope to tempt us to look for- " ward, till they alſo were all gone, and the miſery of " cold added to that of hunger. In this condition, " we had been two days without taſting bread, or " feeling the warmth of fire, calling inceſſantly upon " death to put that end to our diſtreſſes, which a ſenſe " of religion made ſtronger by my wretchedneſs, now " prevented my daring to haſten, when my daughter " ſtole out unknown to us to ſeek for charity in the " ſtreets, where ſhe wandered without meeting any " thing but inſults, and ſolicitations to vice, till hea- " ven directed your ſteps to her.

" Such was the reward of more than twenty years " faithful and hard ſervice, in which I had fought " the battles of my country, in the oppoſite extre- " mities of the globe, with honour, and been inſtru- " mental in making princely fortunes for the ſeveral " commanders, under whom I ſerved.

" This, Sir, is the ſum of my ſtory, in which I " have been as brief as I could, to avoid giving you " pain. We are now your creatures. The lives we " enjoy are immediately the gift of your benevolence; " a benevolence ſo critically timed, (for we could " not have ſubſiſted many hours longer without it) " as to raiſe an hope, that providence which ſent " you to our relief, will not leave its work unfiniſh- " ed, but ſave us from falling again into ſuch mi- " ſery, by means agreeable to its own wiſdom and " goodneſs, though impoſſible for us in our preſent " ſituation, to foreſee."

It was ſome time before my maſter, who had liſtened to the officer's ſtory with ſympathetick attention, was able to ſpeak. Recovering himſelf at length, " Fear not," ſaid he, (in a broken voice) " never " was the righteous forſaken; nor—nor—nor. I " have ſome friends, Sir, who may ſerve!—In the " mean time take this (reaching him a bank note for " twenty pounds) I will not be refuſed! buſineſs calls " me for a few hours; but I will ſee you again in " the evening.—Saying this, he hurried away to hide his emotions without waiting for a reply, which indeed their gratitude left them not the power to make.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

CHRYSAL's maſter carries him to viſit an old acquaintance, who behaves in character, on hearing the officer's ſtory, and ſurprizes CHRYSAL's *maſter with an account of his having turned* PATRIOT. *The general motive for ſuch a ſtep; with ſome remarks on the difference between practice and profeſſion, in different inſtances. Inſignificancy of private characters in attacks upon a miniſtry, and why. Reflections on the origin, and uſe of* SATYRE, *and the abuſe of the terms* GOOD *and* ILL-NATURE, *with the reaſon why ſo many cry out againſt ſatyre.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice in a common way.*

THE moſt intimate acquaintance my maſter had was the perſon, who had been competitor with a former maſter of mine, for admiſſion into the *higher order of* THE MOCK-MONASTRY *. To him he went directly, and relating the officer's ſtory, while it was ſtill warm on his heart, aſked his aſſiſtance to do ſomething more effectual for his relief.

His friend was ſo affected with the melancholy tale, that it was ſome time before he could ſpeak; but when at length he did, it was in a ſtrain very different from what might have been expected. "And the girl "was really ſo pretty!" (ſaid he, with a look of inexpreſſible archneſs) "Well ſaid, my good *Levite*, "I preſume you ſatisfied your own appetites with her "at the tavern, before you provided for thoſe of her "family, though you *ſunk* that part of the ſtory, "for fear I ſhould want to come in for a *ſnack* with "you. The concupiſcence of you parſons is truly "*catholick*, whatever your conſciences may be, and "would engroſs the whole ſex, if it was not reſtrained; not indeed that women come within the

* *Vol.* 3.——*Page* 154.

" meaning of the *Mortmain* acts; as none do more " good in their generation; and conſequently are " better repreſented to the ſtate, than thoſe who are " occupied by the clergy."

" Why, what a ſenſual brute muſt you be, (an- " ſwered my maſter,) to talk of ſatisfying appetites " with a wretch juſt periſhing of cold and hunger! " But it is all affectation. If you had been in my " place, you would have acted juſt as I did; for " whatever airs your wicked wit may aſſume, I know " your heart is ſtrongly ſuſceptible of charity."

" Charity! Hah! hah! hah! I expected that. It " is always the burden of a parſon's ſong. They " make a cloak of it upon all occaſions; and indeed " if it will really cover ſins, as they ſay, they are in " the right to have it ready, for multitudes enough " they have to take up every corner of it. But why " can you not throw off the *cant* along with the " *cloth?* However, that her hunger ſhould not " damp your deſires, any more, here (giving him " half a dozen Guineas) is my help to allay it."

" I will not refuſe your money, for your own ſake, " in hope that your beſtowing even this much ſo " well may help to atone for ſome of the thouſands " you have thrown away. But it was not with any " view of getting it, that I ſpoke to you. Their " immediate neceſſities are ſupplied. I want your " aſſiſtance and intereſt."——

" My intereſt! Hah! hah! hah!—You apply to a " perſon of great intereſt truly. Why my very naming " them would be ſufficient to ruin their hopes for " ever. You don't know, perhaps, that I have turned " *patriot*, and *attacked the miniſtry*."

" Patriot! for heaven's ſake how long, and on " what occaſion have you taken this ſtrange whim?"

" Whim! Pray, good Sir, ſpeak with more reſpect " of the nobleſt principle of the human heart. The " thought came into my head the night before laſt; " and as I do not love to loſe time, eſpecially in things " of ſuch moment, I gave it vent yeſterday, in the " ſhape of a political pamphlet, in which I have proved " to a demonſtration, that the miniſter and all his

" friends

" friends and countrymen are fools, and rogues, and
" deserve to be hanged."

" Is it possible that you can be serious? What in
" the name of common sense, could be your motive
" for taking such a step as this? I thought you had
" expectations of favour from them."——

" What motive should any man of honour and ho-
" nesty have, but the good of his country; their ne-
" glect of which has rouzed an indignation that will
" make them tremble."

" Or, in other words, they have disappointed your
" expectations, and therefore you take this method
" of being revenged on them, and extorting for fear,
" what they would not do from favour; the general
" motive of modern patriots I acknowledge; but with
" what face you can pretend to the title, prostitu-
" ted as it is, I can not think, as your very name is
" a burlesque upon every thing that is serious."

" Pray, how so, reverend and grave Sir? If the
" most profligate sinner makes the best saint, as you
" say, why should not a moderate rake make a tole-
" rable politician? I believe you will hardly attribute
" it to the superior excellence of the latter character;
" but the truth is, though it is impossible for me to
" profess political principles more contrary to my
" practice, than your moral practice is to your preach-
" ing, yet you would deny me the toleration which
" you avail yourself of, and have my words judged
" from my actions; not my actions from my words,
" as you expect your own shall be.

" But my private character, or practice signifies no-
" thing to this undertaking, which is to rip up the
" practices, and characters publick and private, of a
" set of people, who have obtruded themselves into a
" station that exposes them to envy, and every accu-
" sation against whom, will, therefore, be received im-
" plicitly, without regarding who, or what the au-
" thor of it is. Not but there is sufficient room to
" attack those whose whole private lives have been
" such a continued series of vice and folly, and their
" publick conduct, of blunders and villainy, that it is
" impossible to say or think any thing bad enough of
" them,

As he ſaid this, a ſervant brought his friend a note, who upon caſting his eye over it, "The gentleman I "expected (ſaid he) writes me word that he is not "very well this morning, and therefore deſires to ſee "me at his houſe. If you are going my way, I'll *ſet* "*you down.*"

"I thank you! (anſwered my maſter) But my am-"bition does not riſe ſo high as that yet. I do not aſ-"pire to a pillory, or a priſon, even in the cauſe of "my country. Shall we ſee you at dinner?"—

"Moſt certainly! but hold. Can you give me "*change* for this note? I have not time to call upon "my banker."

"I believe I can; but then it muſt be with the "help of what you have yourſelf given me, for the "officer; like other bankers, who make a parade of "taking in charitable ſubſcriptions, at the ſame time "that they ſupport their credit with the money."

"That's right! I'll mention him to the perſon I am "going to. He has abilities to ſerve him effectually; "and I am ſatisfied never wants inclination to do a "generous action." My maſter then gave him the change of his note, *among whith I was*, and took his leave.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

CHRYSAL *ſums up the character of his late maſter. Different opinions for and againſt the propriety, and benefit of* SATYRE. *The former ſupported by good authority. Reaſon of ſome inconveniencies attending the indulgence of ſuch a turn. Character of* CHRYSAL's *new maſter concluded from a former ſketch. He waits upon his Patron. Character of him, with his motives for ſuch a patronage. He gives ſtriking reaſons for objecting to ſome parts of* CHRYSAL's *maſter's pamphlet, which the other makes ſome weak attempts to vindicate.* CHRYSAL's *maſter enjoys the pleaſure of tracing his own fame.*

THE peculiar character of my late maſter made me feel regret, at leaving his ſervice till I ſhould ſee more of him. His abilities did honour to the age, and country in which he lived; and the exalted ſentiments of virtue, which broke from him ſpontaneouſly in the genuine effuſions of his ſoul, gave ſufficient reaſon to judge, that his conduct would be entirely ruled by it, and his talents exerted in the more pleaſing and extenſive way of recommending it to imitation by diſplaying all its advantages, and charms, as ſoon as time ſhould cool the fervour of his paſſions, and apply its lenient balſam to the ſores in his heart, the ſmart of which firſt gave him that poignant turn, and drove him from relief to exceſſes, that too often drowned his better reaſon, and led him into actions, which in a cooler moment he abhorred. In a word, his failings were the luxuriance of nature, as his virtues were her perfection.

As I have ſaid that he turned his poetical vein particularly to ſatyre, I ſee your curioſity to know my opinion of the propriety, and benefit of that manner of applying the powers of *wit*. But I have often told you, that I am not permitted to determine controverted points.

points. Many with a plauſible appearance of *good-nature* decry it, as proceeding from a malevolence of diſpoſition, and tending only to ſpread the influence of bad example by making it known, and harden people in vices, they might forſake if not made deſperate by detection! Many with an appearance of *virtuous indignation* vindicate it, as terrifying from vice, by ſhewing it in its native deformity, and correcting folly, by putting it out of countenance; which latter opinion is ſupported by the authority of one of the moſt ſenſible, and beſt men of his age.*

But ſtill the indulgence of this turn is attended with many inconveniencies, and dangers, if it be not guided with the greateſt care. That imaginary ſuperiority, which the power of making another ridiculous or deteſted, flatters a man with, is ſo pleaſing to the ſelf-love inſeparable from human nature, that it requires uncommon moderation to refrain from exerciſing it, upon improper occaſions, and makes him preſumptuouſly conclude, that whatever happens to diſpleaſe himſelf in any particular, is a juſt object of publick ridicule, and cenſure. An errour, into which the impetuoſity of my *late* maſter ſometimes hurried him.

I have given you a ſketch of the character of my *new* maſter upon a former occaſion;† to which I have only to add here, that a wanton abuſe of uncommon abilities inverted the end, for which they were given, making them diſgraceful to himſelf, and dangerous to his country, a licentious purſuit of every thing called pleaſure having waſted his fortune, and driven him to the deſpicable neceſſity of proſtituting them to any purpoſe, that might promiſe to retrieve his affairs.

The gentleman, whom he went to wait upon, the morning I came into his poſſeſſion, was one who had ſerved

* *Would the anachroniſm admit the ſuppoſition, the editor ſhould imagine that the author here meant the writer of* LETTERS FROM A PERSIAN IN ENGLAND, &c. *whoſe words are theſe,* "*If all the edge of wit is* "*turned on thoſe, who are juſtly the objects of ridicule,* "*Wit is as great a benefit to* PRIVATE LIFE, *as the* "*ſword of the magiſtrate is to* PUBLICK. *Letter* 40.—

† *Vol.* III. *page* 155.

ſerved his king, and country with fidelity and ſucceſs, while he was permitted to follow the dictates of his own reaſon in their ſervice; but gave up the empty and diſgraceful appearance of acting in it, any longer, on finding his judgment diſregarded, and himſelf deſigned to be made only a cypher, to encreaſe the conſequence of another.

The indignation, however, which had prompted him to take this ſtep, led him not into thoſe unjuſtifiable lengths, which are too common, on ſuch occaſions. He was faithful to his ſovereign, though he had loſt his favour; and watched attentively over the intereſts of his country, though he was not permitted to promote them. The only inſtance in which his conduct could poſſibly be cenſured was his patronizing ſuch a man, as my maſter. But it is a maxim in human politicks, that *the end juſtifies the means* be they what they will. He wanted to be reſtored to his former power; and thought this man's expoſing the inſufficiency of thoſe who had ſupplanted him in it, the moſt likely way to effect that purpoſe.

To this deſire of power he was not ſtimulated by the uſual methods of repairing a ruined fortune, or making a new family. His wealth exceeded his very wiſhes; and he already enjoyed the higheſt honours he could aſpire to: all he propoſed was the glory of his Sovereign, and the advantage of his country, which that enthuſiaſtick ambition, from whence proceed the greateſt actions, made him think himſelf the moſt capable, and wiſh to be the happy inſtrument of promoting.

By this gentleman, my maſter was received with that *civility*, which is commonly taken for *eſteem*. After ſome general chat, on the occurrences and humour of the times, in which my maſter modeſtly took to himſelf the merit of the people's diſcontent at the miniſtry, and their meaſures, as raiſed ſolely by his pamphlet. "I allow "the good effects of it (ſaid the gentleman) and great"ly approve the principles upon which it is written; "but I much fear that your zeal has tranſported you "too far. You ſhould of all things have avoided "involving the maſter in your charge againſt the mi"niſters; becauſe that alone can give them any ad-

vantage

" vantage againſt you, and is therefore what they " always feign, however unjuſtly, when they are " attacked, in order to ſcreen themſelves behind him. " Beſide, the character of a Sovereign is ſacred, and " ſhould never be treated but with the higheſt re- " ſpect; eſpecially when *the virtues of the man, are* " *ſuch as would be reſpectable in any character.*"

Such diſapprobation from his principal patron greatly diſappointed my maſter, who was ſo little acquainted with his ſentiments as to think he bore reſentment againſt his Sovereign for the loſs of his favour, as well as againſt thoſe, who had deprived him of it, and conſequently would be pleaſed at any thing that might ſeem to reflect diſgrace upon him.

Recovering himſelf however, before his embarraſſment was perceived, " I imagined (anſwered he, with " his uſual preſence of mind) that it was impoſſible to " accuſe me of diſreſpect to one, whom I have ſtudi- " ouſly ſought every occaſion of praiſing. As for " what you take notice of my charge is not *perſonally* " *againſt* him, but *through* him *againſt* thoſe, who had " the baſeneſs and inſolence to abuſe his *goodneſs* and " *confidence* in ſuch a manner; ſo that I think it is im- " poſſible to wreſt it to the purpoſe you apprehend."—

" I wiſh you may not be miſtaken; but much fear " that your argument will not have the weight you " expect. Praiſe, given with an air of irony, is the " keeneſt inſult; beſide, in this particular caſe, the " praiſes you beſtow upon his *goodneſs* are all at the " expence of his *underſtanding*. However, do not " be diſpirited, at what cannot now be helped. As " I think your intention was not in a fault, you may " depend upon my countenance, and ſupport, let " what will happen."

This comfortable aſſurance reſtored my maſter to his former ſpirits: not deſiring however to continue the converſation any longer upon that ſubject, " I have " this morning (ſaid he) made no inconſiderable ad- " dition to our force. My friend, the poet, whoſe " turn for ſatyre I have heard you ſo much admire, has " promiſed me to exert all his powers in our cauſe.

" He

" He will attack the faults in their *private*, while I " expoſe their publick characters, and experience has " ſhewn that it is eaſy to overturn the *miniſter*, when " the *man* is made ridiculous, or odious."——

" The former I'll grant you; but we have too ma- " ny inſtances in contradiction to the latter, to build " much upon it. However, his powers are great, and " may do much, if he will take care to avoid the " rock upon which you have fallen; and therefore I " ſhall be glad to attach him ſeriouſly to us, eſpecially " as he does not ſeem to be utterly void of virtue, not- " withſtanding the libertiniſm of his conduct in ſome " inſtances."

My maſter would not miſs ſo favourable an opportunity of doing juſtice to the character of his friend. Accordingly he related the ſtory of the diſtreſſes of the officer, and his family, and his generoſity to them in ſo affecting a manner, that the gentleman directly gave him a conſiderable ſum of money, for their preſent relief, with a promiſe of providing for them himſelf, if he could not prevail upon thoſe in power to do it.

Pleaſed with a ſucceſs which he knew would be ſo pleaſing to his friend, my maſter took leave of his patron, and ſet out to trace his own fame from one coffee-houſe to another, and enjoy the applauſes, which the popularity and boldneſs of his attempt procured him from the multitude, wherever he went; after which he repaired to his uſual haunt, where he dined, and ſpent the evening, in his uſual manner.

CHAP.

affairs; as it lightened the perſonal prejudices againſt him, and gave a good opinion of a cauſe, which appeared to have the countenance of ſuch a man.

Intoxicated with the popularity he had thus acquired, which if rightly managed might have done great matters, he was no ſooner at liberty, than he threw off all reſtraint, and ran into ſuch licentiouſneſs, as in a ſhort time leſſened its force, and loſt him every trace of the good opinion of all who gave themſelves time to think of the cauſes and conſequences of ſuch conduct. But his triumph was not long-lived.

He had been reſtored to his liberty, not as a right common to all the members of the community, on a ſuppoſition of the illegality of the manner, in which he had been deprived of it; but in conſequence of certain immunities, annexed to a particular part of the legiſlature, to which he belonged.

Though the abilities and integrity of the magiſtrate who made this diſtinction were unqueſtionable, ſome perſons who looked farther than the preſent moment, imagined they could trace it to a cauſe, not commonly attended to. He had on former occaſions been inſtrumental in depriving ſome people of liberty in the ſame manner; to have condemned that manner therefore now, as illegal, would have been condemning himſelf; at the ſame time, that upright obedience to the dictates of his preſent opinion, obliged him to ſet him free. Such a difficulty muſt have been diſtreſſing; but this diſtinction delivered him from it, and enabled him to ſave his credit, and conſcience both; as thoſe people had borne no part in the legiſlature, and therefore had not been entitled to ſuch immunity.

I ſee your indignation ariſe, at the thought, that in a country which boaſts of being governed by *equal* laws, any one ſet of men ſhould enjoy immunities, denied to the reſt; but that indignation proceeds from viewing the matter in a partial light. In the country where your lot has happily fallen, the end of government is better ſecured by a diviſion of its powers, than in any other under heaven. The great wiſdom of thoſe, who made this

this diviſion, appears in the proviſions made to preſerve each part in it, independant of the reſt, the only means by which the diviſion itſelf could be preſerved.

Now as the *executive* power *neceſſarily* belongs ſolely to the prince, it was *equally neceſſary* to ſecure thoſe, who bore a part with him in the *legiſlative*, from any undue execution of that power, which might be attempted in order to break through that independance, and join the *legiſlative* to the *executive*; or in other words, *veſt both powers abſolutely, and without limitation in the prince.* And this was the reaſon of immunities, ſo much talked of, and ſo little underſtood.

If it be ſaid, that theſe immunities operate alſo againſt fellow ſubjects, from whom there can be no ſuch fear, and are ſometimes (perhaps too often) abuſed to diſhoneſt ends, the anſwer muſt be ſought for in the depravity of the human heart, which will pervert the beſt inſtitutions to the worſt purpoſes, and makes it neceſſary to preclude every exception, that it ſhould not be extended to ſerve them. As for inſtance, if the meaneſt ſubject of the ſtate had a right to claim the aſſiſtance of the civil power in every caſe, againſt any member of the legiſlature, while in his *legiſlative* capacity, that right might be ſuborned, or feigned by the *executive* power in ſuch a manner, as to over-turn his independency, and prevent his diſcharging the truſt committed to him: for which reaſon it is better that an individual ſhould ſuffer (to ſuppoſe the worſt) than an opportunity be given for ruining the whole community; according to the known maxim, that an *evil (which affects but one)* is preferable to an *inconvenience (which affects many.)* And this immunity, which is really the ſhield and ſafety of the ſtate, can never be invaded, but from a deſign againſt the liberty of the ſtate, nor abſolutely given up, without giving up that liberty along with it; though the right may be waved in particular inſtances, which appear unworthy of the benefit of it. To actions criminal in their own nature, between individuals, or immediately dangerous to the ſtate, it was never deſigned to be extended, as in ſuch caſes it

would have been deſtructive of the end, for which it was inſtituted.

While my maſter was running riot in this extravagant manner, ſome things happened which raiſed in his favour the indignation, and pity of many who diſliked the man, and diſapproved his proceedings, becauſe they ſaw him perſecuted by unjuſtifiable means.

It may well be imagined, that I did not remain long enough in his poſſeſſion to ſee the concluſion of this affair; but as I had ample opportunity of being acquainted with it at the time, and ſee that your curioſity is intereſted in the event, I will continue the account here, eſpecially as the principal occurrences in my next ſervice, were connected with it in ſo particular a manner, that it is neceſſary to explain one in order to underſtand the other.

CHAP. VI.

CHRYSAL's maſter takes a foreign tour. Remarks upon national reflections, and attacks upon private characters. CHRYSAL's maſter is called to an account for certain improper liberties, by a very improper perſon, whom he treats with uncommon propriety. CHRYSAL makes ſome out-of-the-way reflections on a queſtion much canvaſſed to little purpoſe.

WHEN my maſter had in ſome meaſure exhauſted the firſt flow of his ſpirits upon the recovery of his liberty, he made a ſhort excurſion abroad, as if merely for amuſement, but in reality to provide a place of retreat, in caſe of the worſt, as his apprehenſions could not but be alarmed, whenever he allowed himſelf time to think.

I have obſerved that in the account he gave my late maſter, when he firſt told him of his attack upon the miniſter, he ſaid he had included in it all his *countrymen.*

men. This he really had done on that, and continued to do, on all other occaſions with a licentiouſneſs, unexampled; but which loſt its force, and became contemptible by ſinking into ſcurrility.

Attacks upon private characters, unleſs forced by neceſſity, or deſigned to ſerve good purpoſes, ſuch as perſonal reformation, or caution to others, are literally *abuſe*, and proceed always from a bad heart; but national reflections, as they can anſwer no good purpoſe of any kind, are abuſe in every ſenſe, and proceed equally from *folly* and *malevolence*. A *folly* indeed that is often puniſhed by *fools*, who take to themſelves that abuſe, which belongs not to them in particular, and would paſs by, without lighting upon them, if not applied thus by themſelves.

My maſter had not been long abroad, when a *countryman of the miniſter*'s thought proper to call him to account for the liberties he had taken with his country. The abſurdity of ſuch a ſtep in any man was ſtill aggravated by the peculiar circumſtances of this perſon, who had actually given weight to the ſevereſt part of the charge againſt his country, (indeed the only part that would admit of weight, the reſt being, as I have ſaid, nothing but ſcurrility) by engaging in the ſervice of the enemies of its preſent government, and fighting their battles againſt it. Such an antagoniſt therefore was beneath the notice of any man of reaſon, and accordingly was treated ſo by my maſter, who on this occaſion behaved with a moral propriety, and prudence, much above the tenor of his general character. But his enemies beheld his conduct in a different light, and attributed to *cowardice* what was really the effect of *courage*.

You ſeem ſurprized at my ſaying that his declining to fight was the effect of courage! but reflect a moment, and you will ſee that it is *the motive of fighting* and *not the mere fighting*, that conſtitutes true courage; and that the *faſhionable courage* of venturing life for punctilio's of imaginary honour is *real cowardice*, as it proceeds ſolely from fear of the falſe cenſure of the world; *and therefore, that to brave that cenſure in ſuch caſes is the higheſt courage*.

I would not be underſtood by this to declare abſolutely againſt a man's fighting in his own cauſe, in all caſes indiſcriminately. Different circumſtances make an eſſential difference in things which ſuperficially appear to be alike. A man's venturing his life, as I have ſaid, in vindicating *empty punctilio's* of *imaginary honour*, or in *ſupport of injuſtice*, is the higheſt and moſt ingrateful inſult to the author of that life, who has made the preſervation of it the firſt principle of action, and conſequently an indiſpenſible duty, when it can be preſerved without violation of thoſe greater duties, which he has thought proper to preſcribe.

But as there are other things more valuable than life, becauſe without them life would loſe its value, reaſon, which is the voice of heaven, permits to hazard the leſſer good for the preſervation of the greater, and this is the juſtification of war between different ſtates.

To prevent the evils, which ſuch a recourſe between individuals in the ſame ſtate, muſt be attended with, laws are eſtabliſhed to preſerve thoſe rights, and redreſs injuries, which they may offer to each other; to theſe laws therefore it is an indiſpenſible duty to recur for ſuch redreſs and preſervation, where they are able to effect them; but this duty does not ſeem to extend ſo far as abſolutely and indiſcriminately to preclude the other method of a man's ſtriving, at the hazard of his life, to effect them himſelf, when the laws cannot do it, as is too often the caſe, it being impoſſible for human wiſdom to make proviſion for every occurrence, which in the complication and extenſiveneſs of human action may require it.

An opinion, ſo contrary to that profeſſed by all, who have undertaken to diſcuſs this ſubject, however conſonant to the ſenſe of mankind in general as ſhewn in their practice, ſhould be ſupported by the plaineſt, and moſt convincing reaſons.

A good name is the immediate jewel of the ſoul; it is the firſt fruit and the reward of virtue: the preſervation of it therefore is indiſputably worth hazarding life for, where the laws have not ſufficiently provided for

its

its defence; as is the caſe, in many of the moſt delicate, and tender points. If a man for inſtance is unjuſtly accuſed of a fact, that ruins his *good name*, at the ſame time, that the accuſation comes not within the reach of any law, from which he may receive redreſs, can reaſon ſay that he is not juſtifiable in ſtriving for that redreſs himſelf, and vindicating his good name, at the hazard of his life, when that life would be only miſery without it?

But here another difficulty occurs. Shall a man, it is ſaid, put himſelf upon a level with his injurer, and riſque a ſecond injury, in ſeeking ſatisfaction for the firſt? This certainly is an evil, but muſt be ſubmitted to, to prevent a greater.

If a man were permitted to redreſs himſelf abſolutely, without ſuch a riſque, the conſequence would be, that partiality to himſelf would make him think every thing that ſhould diſpleaſe him, an injury ſufficient to merit ſuch a redreſs, whereby murders would be multiplied to the reproach of humanity and ruin of the ſtate. But where this riſque makes the redreſs attended with danger, people are cautious not to run into it, but on what they at leaſt think good grounds.

Beſide riſquing life in an even ſcale is in ſome manner ſtaking it upon the juſtice of the cauſe, and appealing to heaven for deciſion; and conſequently ſucceſs clears the character in general eſtimation; whereas killing inſidiouſly, or without ſuch equal riſque, only confirms the firſt charge on a preſumption of conſciouſneſs, and aggravates it with the weight of new guilt. And this was the ſenſe of mankind, till the remedy was perverted to ſuch an exceſs as to become worſe than the evil, and therefore neceſſary to be aboliſhed, as far as human laws can aboliſh a general principle of action.

One particular though in the laws made to aboliſh it, deſerves remark; as it ſhews a ſtriking inſtance of the ſagacity with which human laws are often made. Killing a man, in a deliberate duel, be the cauſe ever ſo important, and utterly unprovided for in the law, is accounted *murder*, and made capitally criminal; but

killing in a drunken broil, or ungoverned guſt of paſſion, is only a pardonable offence, and called by the ſofter name of *man-ſlaughter!* Now if the makers of that law had but conſidered which action proceeded from the worſt cauſe, and was liable to be attended with the worſt conſequences, from the poſſible frequency of it, they might perhaps have ſeen reaſon to reverſe the caſe, and made the *latter* capital, and the *former* at leaſt pardonable.

In a word, he who takes away the life of another, or loſes his own, in a trivial or unjuſt cauſe, or where the laws of his country have provided him redreſs, is guilty of murder; whereas he, who kills or is killed in a cauſe of real importance, for which there is no remedy provided him by the law, ſins not againſt the *ſpirit* of that law, however he may againſt the *letter*; and conſequently ſeems to be intitled to an immunity from the penalties of it. This reaſoning though reſpects only the reaſon of the law, and is by no means laid down as a rule for practice; it being the indiſpenſible duty of a ſubject to obey the plain letter of the law, without preſuming to oppoſe his private opinion to it, otherwiſe than by humble application to proper authority to have it altered.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL's maſter's late conduct draws him into a new ſcrape, in which he comes off but ſecond beſt. He takes advantage of his misfortune to make his eſcape from a greater. He ſuffers the reſentment of his enemies, as far as they can reach him, and meets from his friends the fate of all uſeleſs tools, after having ſerved them with improbable ſucceſs. A ſtriking inſtance of the advantage of an upright judge, and equal laws. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

THE opinion, that my maſter's having behaved in this manner proceeded from a want of ſpirit, ſoon laid him under a neceſſity of ſhewing the contrary. A perſon, who was involved deeper, than he choſe to appear, in his accuſations againſt the miniſter, though he was known to be his creature, thought he might ſafely invalidate the credit of the charge, and curry farther favour with his patron, by denying it in terms of ſuch abuſe, as ſhould make the accuſer infamous, on ſubmitting to them as he imagined he would.

But in this he found himſelf miſtaken. The *captiouſneſs of falſe honour*, that often paſſes for true reſolution *which is only the reſult of virtue*, was now piqued; and two beings (for it was impoſſible for the other to draw back) who called themſelves rational, hazarded their lives, in ſupport of what neither could have ſupported by reaſon.

The event proved immediately unfavourable to my maſter, who received a wound, that for ſome time ſeemed to threaten his life. But he ſoon thought the danger amply made amends for, by the pretence it gave him to put off from time to time the reſentment of that part of the legiſlature to which he belonged, for the offence which had occaſioned his being confined, and at length to fly from it, when he found it could not be any longer prevented by ſuch fineſſes,

from burſting on his head. Such a flight was an implicit acknowledgment of his guilt. He was therefore deprived of his part in the legiſlature, and conſequently of all the immunities annexed to it, and given up to the common courſe of the laws, for that and other matters whenever he ſhould be found within the reach of their power. Nor was this all! to ſhew ſtill ſtronger diſapprobation of his conduct, the breach of thoſe immunities, upon which the magiſtrate had founded his diſcharge from confinement, was overlooked, and ſuch offences as his excluded from their protection for the future.

You cannot be ſurprized at his meeting ſuch a fate. The tools of a ſtateſman, however ſucceſsful they may have been, are always thrown aſide with neglect, the moment they have done their work; but when they fail, however blameleſly, or run into any error, though only from exceſs of zeal, the weight of the neglect is made ſtill heavier, by heaping all the blame upon them. But what will you think, when I tell you, that unequal as he muſt appear to have been to ſuch an attempt, in conſequence, character and abilities, he raiſed ſo threatening a ſtorm, that the miniſter thought proper to retire out of its way; as all his friends apprehended they ſhould have been obliged to follow him: a ſucceſs, for which he was in a great meaſure indebted to the aſſiſtance of my late maſter, who repreſented their private characters in ſuch colours, in his ſatirical writings, as will make their memories pay a dear price for their power, the poetical merits of his works, in which their names are branded with indelible infamy, enſuring their immortality. Such is the baſis, upon which ſtateſmen found their greatneſs; and ſo eaſily is a jealous populace, led away, by any thing that flatters their preſent humour.

I ſay not this, as deciding upon the merits of the diſputes in which he was concerned. I think too meanly of human politicks in general, to give my opinion in favour of any one ſcheme of them, in preference to another. They are all alike a jumble of villainy, and blunders. All I intend is, to ſhew on what a ſandy foundation, men who value themſelves upon

upon their wiſdom, wear out their lives in anxious toils, and dangers, to build their hopes; and what unworthy means are often made uſe of to overturn them, and work ends, reputed great, on purpoſe perhaps to humble man, in his own eyes.

As for my maſter, he was no ſooner removed out of the ſight of the mob, whoſe idol he had been in ſuch an extravagant degree, than he was entirely out of their mind, and the ſtorm he had raiſed ſubſided ſo totally, as to leave no other trace behind it, but his ruin.

I have obſerved your anxiety, to know whether he ever obtained redreſs, for the injuſtice done him in his property; and the injurious treatment he received when he was firſt apprehended, as I ſaid that the fellows employed to take him, had under the ſanction of authority committed all the outrages of lawleſs ruffians. The intereſt you take in the cauſe of ſuch a man, can ariſe from nothing but your love of juſtice, *which ſhould not be violated in the perſon of the moſt unjuſt.* It will therefore give you pleaſure to be informed, that the laws of your country never ſhone with brighter luſtre than in this inſtance.

In deſpite of every artifice, and effort which power and chicane could make uſe of to evade, or intimidate from, the execution of them (a ſtriking inſtance of the latter of which was depriving his patron of every degree of power and honour, of which he could be deprived without regard to his great ſervices and perſonal conſequence, only for appearing in his cauſe) an able and upright magiſtrate ſupported them with ſuch reſolution and judgment, that he obtained exemplary redreſs for all he had ſuffered that could be redreſſed, as did ſeveral others who had been involved in the ſame circumſtances, as having been employed by him.

In gratification to your curioſity, I have thus given you the general heads of this ſtory. To have dwelt on the minuter circumſtances, however curious in themſelves, would have led me too great a length, beſide that they come not within my deſign, as I was not directly in his poſſeſſion, when they happened. To return therefore now to the regular chain of my own adventures, I muſt go back to the time of my

leaving his ſervice which was not very long after he had been releaſed from his confinement.

Among the crouds that came to congratulate him upon this event, was a clergyman, whoſe profeſſions of perſonal attachment, and reſpect for his principles, and abilities were ſtrained to ſuch a fulſome height, as would have diſguſted vanity itſelf.

My maſter ſaw through him directly, and played him off with humour peculiar to himſelf, till he concluded with telling him, that he had a work then in hand, upon the ſame ſcheme, with his, which he intended to publiſh by ſubſcription.

My maſter, who knew the man, took the hint, in the proper light of a modeſt way of begging, and *clapped* a couple of guineas into his hand, deſiring to be inſerted in his liſt, *upon which occaſion I left his ſervice.*

CHAP. VIII.

Reaſon of the joy with which CHRYSAL *was received by his new maſter. Account of a curious, though not uncommon way of getting a living. Converſation between* CHRYSAL'*s maſter and his gueſt. They compare notes on their different attempts in the literary trade.* CHRYSAL'*s maſter is encouraged by his friend from his own example. A remarkable account of a certain matter, that made much noiſe.*

THE joy my *new* maſter felt on the receipt of ſo ſmall a ſum, ſhewed the conſequence it was of to him. He thanked his benefactor, in terms of rapture, and vowing eternal gratitude, and attachment to him, and his cauſe, departed with an happy heart. Nor was his joy without cauſe. He had invited an acquaintance to ſup and ſpend the evening with him, and had neither money nor credit to provide any thing for his entertainment.

Deſpicable as the vanity of making invitations in ſuch circumſtances may appear to you, it was one of his

his chief reſources, to ſupport himſelf, and his family; as he never invited any, but ſuch as he expected to borrow much more from, than it coſt him to entertain them.

Your indignation at the mention of ſo mean a ſhift ſhews your happy ignorance of the ways of this populous place, in which there are numbers, who keep up a decency of external appearance, and ſupport life only by this method of raiſing contributions on their acquaintances, ſpending with one, what they have got from another, in order to get from him too, and ſo on; with this difference only from common beggars, that they ſeldom apply to the ſame perſon twice, and inſtead of praying for their benefactors with an appearance of gratitude, wherever they meet them, avoid their company and are always ſeeking for new acquaintances, as quarry for them to prey upon.

On this errand he had ſallied out this morning, but met with ſuch bad ſucceſs that he had been obliged to have recourſe to the *ſubſcription-ſcheme*, an addition which he had lately made to his former plan. His joy therefore at my late maſter's generoſity was but natural. He returned home in high ſpirits, and giving his wife half his prize to provide *two or three nice little things*, ſecured *me*, for future contingencies.

Every thing being thus adjuſted, his gueſt who came punctually at the appointed time, was received with all the *formalities*, and *airs* of *politeneſs* of *high life*. The converſation before, and at ſupper ran on the uſual topicks of the *weather*, *politicks*, and the *ſecret hiſtory of the day*; but when my maſter's lady had withdrawn, and he ſaw his friend begin to palate his wine with pleaſure, (for he never made his puſh, till the heart was warm) he took occaſion from ſome *modeſt* mention the other made of his munificence in the relief of merit in diſtreſs, to lament his own inability to indulge that darling pleaſure of his ſoul, as a proper introduction to his buſineſs.

"I have wondered with much concern" (anſwered his friend) "at your languiſhing ſo long in this obſcu-
"rity. It is all your own fault. Why do you not
"exert

" erert yourſelf? There is nothing which ſpirit and " diligence cannot conquer."——

" Very true, my deareſt friend!" (replied my maſter with a ſhrug of his ſhoulders, and an heavy ſigh) " But what can diligence, or abilities either do, when " they cannot find employment? I have *offered* my- " ſelf to *miniſtry*, and *oppoſition*, to *bookſellers*, and " *news-writers*; and all to no purpoſe: though in- " deed if it was not for the aſſiſtance of one of the " latter, who now and then takes an *eſſay*, or a *letter* " from me, I ſhould be utterly at a loſs. So that " what can I do?"

" What! why any thing rather than be idle. If " one thing won't do, another may. There is not " an article *in the trade*, which I have not tried in " my time, I *made bibles*, *magazines*, and *reviews*; " *ſermons*, *ballads*, and *dying ſpeeches*; and though all " failed I never loſt my ſpirit. The miſcarriage of one " ſcheme only ſet my invention at work to ſtrike out " another. No man can have greater difficulties to " ſtruggle with, than I had; and yet you ſee I have " got over them all."——

" Yes! but my deareſt friend, you had advantages! " the countenance, and aſſiſtance of ſuch a patron as " your's."——

" Were juſt as great advantages to me, as your " patron's are to you; and no more. I had the ho- " nourable advantage of *leading a bear*, for a bit of " bread; and betraying his ſecrets to his father, and " mother, for the hope of a church-living, which I " ſhould not have got at laſt; but that it was not " worth telling."——

" You aſtoniſh me! Don't you owe all your pre- " ferments, all your affluence to the intereſt of your " patron?"——

" What I owe my preferments to is not neceſſary to " mention; but my affluence I owe to a very different " cauſe. *The detection of that impoſtor* was the thing, " that made my fortune, I might have remained in " my original poverty to this day, if it had not been " for that."

" For

" For that! Is it poſſible? I cannot conceive that " the profits upon the ſale of a pamphlet or two, (and " that not a very extenſive ſale neither) could do ſuch " great things. My *novel*, I thought, bade as fair for " a *good run* as any thing: it was *ſeaſoned high* to the " taſte of the times, and yet it did very little more " than pay."——

" The ſale! Hah! hah! hah! No, No! I did not " depend upon that. My profit came in another way " entirely."——

" What can be your meaning! If it be not too " great a ſecret, I ſhould be much obliged to you to " explain this matter. It may poſſibly be of ſervice " to me."

" Why, on that account; and as I think I can de- " pend upon your honour, I don't much care if I do. " If you are ſo much ſurprized at my ſaying that I made " my fortune by that pamphlet, what will you think " when I tell you farther, that I never wrote one line " of it, nor was I any more concerned in the ſale, " than you, who knew nothing of the matter? But, " not to perplex you with gueſſing, at what it is im- " poſſible you ſhould ever diſcover! You can be no " ſtranger to the noiſe that *impoſtor* made, when he firſt " came here. While he did no more than tell his own " ſtory, it was thought by his old fraternity to be the " beſt way not to give it conſequence by contradicting " it, but let it die away of itſelf; beſides, that poſſibly " it might not have been ſo eaſy to contradict it to any " effect, while the perſons concerned were all living, " and the facts freſh in every one's memory. But when " he went ſo far as to attack the whole body, and " was evidently undermining the foundation upon " which they ſtood, by tearing off the veil of antiqui- " ty behind which they hid themſelves, and expoſing " all their myſtery to light, the matter became more " ſerious, and it was judged neceſſary to ruin his cha- " racter in order to invalidate the credit of his work, " the merit of which made a direct attack not only " difficult, but alſo too doubtful of ſucceſs to hazard " an affair of ſuch importance upon it.

" For

" For this reaſon heaven and hell were conjured up, " and every engine ſet at work to prove his ſtory of " himſelf falſe in every particular, and make him ap- " pear the moſt complicated villain that ever exiſted. " But the credit of thoſe, who made this attack upon " him, was too low, for it to have any effect, as their " principles, and the intereſted motives upon which " they proceeded were ſufficiently known, ſo that it " only did him ſervice by ſhewing his conſequence.

" While they were conſidering how to repair this " defeat, neceſſity ſuggeſted to me the lucky thought " of offering them my aſſiſtance. I had already got " ſome degree of credit by anticipating time in the " detection of two ſilly impoſtures, the abſurdity of " which would ſoon have diſcovered them without " my help. This gave weight to my offer; accord- " ingly they readily embraced it; and deſiring only " the *ſanction of my name*, (for which you may judge, " I was *well paid*) took all the trouble upon them- " ſelves.

" The reaſons, which defeated them, aſſiſted me. " Every thing *I was thought to ſay* carried weight, as " *appearing to proceed* from the higheſt candour, and " attachment to truth, as nothing elſe could *naturally* " be ſuppoſed to have made me take ſuch pains to " detect an impoſture, ſo favourable to the principles " I profeſſed myſelf. The publick alſo had got " enough of his ſtory, and was ready to liſten to one " againſt him. The conſequence you know. His " character was ruined with the public; and of courſe " a prejudice raiſed againſt his work, which ruined " that alſo without the trouble of a regular confu- " tation, which as I obſerved before, might not have " been an eaſy matter: and now I hope the myſtery " is explained to you."——

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL's maſter makes ſome ſtriking remarks, on his friend's account of this myſterious tranſaction, and draws inferences from it, not commonly attended to. He entertains his friend with a curious ſong, who makes an important hit, juſt in his own character, upon it. CHRYSAL's *maſter boggles a little at firſt, at his friend's propoſal, but is encouraged by his example to undertake it.*

"I AM much obliged to you, for ſuch a proof of "your confidence," (returned my maſter) "particularly as it clears up ſome points to me, which I own "gave me equal concern and ſurprize; and of which "delicacy prevented my deſiring an explanation from "you. Theſe were the manner in which that attack "was made upon him, and the arguments and proofs "brought in ſupport of it, which were ſo *unfair*, *in-*"*concluſive*, and in many inſtances *contradictory*, that "I was aſtoniſhed any man of ſenſe and honeſty could "make uſe of, or be influenced by them."

"Why, that is very true. Their zeal often over-"ſhot the mark to be ſure. But that ſignified nothing "Set the publick once upon the ſcent of ſcandal; and "they'll hunt it like blood-hounds through thick and "thin. Nothing can be ſo groſs, as to ſtop them. "You may as well whiſtle to the wind to change its "courſe, as ſpeak reaſon to the people, when they "have conceived a prejudice."——

"But what is your opinion of that affair? Is he, or "is he not, the impoſtor they would make him? For "I confeſs, the arguments by which they would prove "him one, are ſo far from anſwering their deſign with "me, that *I think they prove the contrary by proving* "*nothing*; as it is natural to conclude, that if there "were any better, ſuch would not have been made "uſe of. But you certainly muſt have had ſufficient

"opportunities

" opportunities of being informed, in the intercourſe " you neceſſarily had with them."——

" As to that, I know no more of the matter than " you do, nor ever gave myſelf the trouble to en- " quire. All the intercourſe I had with them, was " only to ſave appearances, and get my money. Whe- " ther he was an impoſtor or not, was the ſame thing " to me. I was paid for ſeeming to prove him one; " and that was all I cared for."

" But you continue to call him one ſtill. Do they " alſo pay you for that now?"——

" No. I do that for my own credit. Were I to " retract, all the ſcandal that has been heaped upon " him, *in my name*, would revert upon myſelf, ſo that " whenever I mention him, I am obliged to do it in " the old phraſe. I know ſome *ſqueamiſh* people " would have *ſcrupled* the whole; but that is not my " way of thinking. I hold nothing to be ſo great a re- " proach, as poverty, nor any thing a ſin that can get " over it. And ſo here's my ſervice to you. I wiſh " you could hit upon ſuch another opportunity."

" And if I would ſcruple to make uſe of it, may I " periſh in my preſent poverty; and I defy the devil " to find an heavier curſe."

The converſation then turned to more general topics, in the courſe of which, my late maſter naturally coming to be mentioned, " That's right" (ſaid my maſter) " I " have ſomething to ſhew you, that will give you plea- " ſure. You may remember I told you, that I am ſome- " times obliged to a printer of my acquaintance for " *helping me to a job in the letter or eſſay way*. Hap- " pening to call upon him this morning, to try if he " could take any thing from me, he ſhewed me this," (pulling a piece of greaſy paper, out of his pocket) " which I think really a curioſity. It is a *proof* of a " bawdy-ſong, which the gentleman we have been " talking of wrote, and had a few copies of it printed " for the amuſement of his particular intimates. My " friend got it from one of his journey-men, who " ſometimes works for that gentleman, and ſays there " are a good many more of them, which are all printed " together in a ballad. You'll find it worth your

" reading

" reading. Nothing ever was ſo highly worked up. " It gave me ineffable pleaſure."——

" If you can prove this to be wrote by that perſon" (ſaid the other ſpitting, and riggling in his chair, after having pored over it for ſome time) " your fortune is " made! you know his enemies are ſtriving to run him " down, by any means. Now this will give them " ſo plauſible an handle againſt him, that they will " not fail to reward you liberally for the diſcovery. " All you have to do is to prove it plainly upon " him."

" I am pretty ſure that may be done;" (anſwered my maſter with ſome heſitation) " But I—I—I— " I hardly know how——I am under perſonal ob- " ligation."——

" Nay, if you let ſuch things as that interfere, I " give you up. What ſignifies *paſt obligation*, when " put in competition with *preſent intereſt?* You know " what my old antagoniſt ſays, that it is a rule among " his former fraternity never to let any ſocial, or moral " duties interfere with religion, of which he gives a " remarkable inſtance in his own ſtory. Now *my in-* " *tereſt is my religion*; and every thing which inter- " feres with that I abjure; as I have ſufficiently " proved. But I beg pardon, I would by no means " preſs you to do any thing againſt your conſcience, " if it is ſo tender."——

" Wrong me not, my deareſt friend, by ſuch an " opinion: my conſcience is as far from being tender, " as your's can be. I was only ſurprized, that I had " not myſelf ſeen what you mentioned. But now that " your friendſhip has pointed it out to me, you ſhall " ſee me purſue it as eagerly as you can deſire. All I " want is your direction! Leave the reſt to me."

The remainder of the evening was ſpent in conſultation upon the plan proper to be purſued, the forming of which my maſter ſubmitted implicitly to the ſuperior judgment, and experience of his friend, who was ſo pleaſed with this mark of his reſpect, and ſo ſure of ſucceſs that on going away, he took a modeſt hint, and lent him five guineas, reminding him at the ſame time of the confidence he had placed in his honour,

by

by diſcloſing his affairs to him, and enjoining him to ſecreſy.

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL's maſter purſues his ſcheme, and violates moral honeſty to ſerve the cauſe of virtue and religion. He waits upon his patron, who honeſtly refuſes a character, to which he knows he has no right; but undertakes the affair from a more prevailing motive, in which he is remarkably aſſiſted by another perſon, of leſs modeſty, who pleads the cauſe of religion and virtue in vain, till honour at length turns the ſcale in their favour. CHRYSAL's *maſter is diſappointed of his hopes, and makes uſe of an expedient in character, to eſcape from the juſt reward of all his labours.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

NOT to loſe a moment's time, in a matter of ſuch importance, my maſter went next morning to his worthy friend the printer, to whom he opened his ſcheme, and by his influence with the aſſiſtance of a bribe, and promiſes of much more, he prevailed on the fellow from whom the former paper was got, to betray the truſt of his employer, and ſteal the whole ballad.

The next thing was to make his honeſt acquiſition known to thoſe from whom he expected the reward of his pious pains. For this purpoſe he waited upon his patron, and having with difficulty gained acceſs to him, on repeated meſſages of important buſineſs, after the common cant of compliments, "I am come, Sir," (ſaid he) "on an errand, that I know muſt be agreeable to "you, as it will afford a ſignal opportunity of ſhewing "your regard for religion and virtue."

"Heh!" (anſwered my patron) "My regard for "religion, and virtue! what the devil does the fellow "mean? What regard have I ever ſhewn for either in "word or action, that ſhould put ſuch a thought in "your

" your head? If you are come to preach to me, you " ſhall ſoon find the effects of your piety."—

" Pardon me, Sir; I know you better than to be " guilty of ſuch preſumption! What I mean is this. " Fortune has favoured me with an opportunity of " putting it into your power to eſtabliſh ſuch a charac- " ter; and as I know moſt people are fond of the name, " when it can be obtained without the trouble of the " practice, I thought it my duty to acquaint you with " it; eſpecially as it will enable you, at the ſame time, " to do a particular pleaſure to your friends in power."

" Why, there may be ſomething in that, as you ſay; " but for the reſt, I care as little for the name, as I " do for the practice; and would not give myſelf a " moment's trouble to get it; ſo be quick, and let me " hear what you have got to ſay. I have *a match to ride* " to morrow againſt a gentleman for a conſiderable " wager, and muſt ſee his groom this morning, in or- " der *to ſettle matters with him*; beſide which, I have " an aſſignation with his wife, who expects me at this " very time, ſo that I have not a moment to loſe about " religion and virtue."

My maſter, who knew him too well to attempt interfering with ſuch engagements, politely wiſhed him ſucceſs, and then gave him in few words, an account of the whole affair, only reſerving to himſelf the honour of the thought, with which his patron was ſo pleaſed, that he promiſed to give him all the aſſiſtance in his power, *if it was only for the fun of the thing.*

Accordingly, as ſoon as he could ſpare time, from his own weightier concerns, he mentioned the matter, to thoſe more immediately concerned in it, who embraced the project eagerly, and rewarded my maſter with moſt *liberal promiſes*, for his pains, of which they reſolved to take advantage, in order to cruſh a perſon, either hated or feared by every one among them.

In the attack made upon him, for this purpoſe, the principal part was undertaken by one, whoſe regard for religion and virtue was heightened by a motive not the moſt conſiſtent with either. This was the perſon, who

who had been competitor with the culprit for *the higher order of the* MOCK MONASTERY. In the account I gave you of that curious tranſaction, I obſerved that he cheriſhed a ſecret grudge againſt the other, which was aggravated ſo violently by the diſgrace he ſuffered on that occaſion, that he had prevailed to have him expelled the ſociety *. Such an opportunity therefore as this, of compleating his revenge, was not to be miſſed by one of his principles. Accordingly though at the ſight of the ballad he knew it to be no more, than a collection of the ſongs, *which he had himſelf often bore a part in ſinging at the monaſtery, and ſome of the worſt of which he had boaſted of being the author of*, he inveighed againſt it with all the fervency and enthuſiaſtic zeal of a modern fanatick, and diſplayed the danger of letting ſuch an inſult, upon every thing held ſacred, go unpuniſhed, in ſuch ſtrong and affecting colours, as afforded high entertainment to all who heard him, and were acquainted with his life.

But all his eloquence would have proved ineffectual to make ſuch of his fraternity as were not, like him, ſtimulated by private motives, give the lie to their own practice in ſo flagrant a manner, as to cenſure the theory of it, had not ſome particular expreſſions happened to affect the honour of one of them, whom all the reſt of courſe eſpouſed; and *thus for once, honour turned the ſcale, in favour of virtue and religion, too light by themſelves*; and the ballad was condemned, as tending to debauch the principles of the people, though it was ſufficiently known that it was not deſigned for publication, nor would ever have been heard of, had not this attack raiſed a curioſity about it.

Through the whole of this important tranſaction, my maſter performed his part moſt cleverly, ſtopping at nothing that was thought any way neceſſary to bring it to effect. As ſoon therefore as it was concluded, he prepared to receive the reward of his labour, the enjoyment of which he anticipated in imagination in every ſhape it could be given.

But

* *Vol.* iii.—*Page* 160.

But it was not long before he found his hopes had been too ſanguine. Inſtead of being rewarded immediately as he had been made to expect, the job was ſcarce done, when he could perceive the ſmiles of favour grow cooler upon him, as often as he went to pay his court to his patrons, in order to keep them in mind of their promiſes. A ſtate of ſuch uncertainty, ſevere enough upon any, was not to be borne by one in his circumſtances. The expectations he had raiſed in the height of his hopes, had opened the mouths of all his creditors upon him, with an importunity not to be quieted; beſide, that he had imbezzled ſome public money, entruſted to him, a demand for which he expected every day, and knew he could not ſhift off, for a moment.

Driven almoſt to diſtraction by ſuch irreſiſtible neceſſity, he had no reſource but to throw himſelf at the feet of the perſon, who had appeared moſt ſanguine in the purſuit of his ſcheme, and conſequently been moſt liberal of his promiſes to him, and implore his aſſiſtance to extricate him from his accumulated diſtreſſes. But they who will moſt readily avail themſelves of villainy, always deteſt the villain. All the return he received, was a cold profeſſion of concern; and a ſhameleſs excuſe of wanting that power to relieve him, which the caitiff ſuppliant well knew he had.

A new misfortune often lightens the weight of thoſe under which the mind was ſinking before, by rouzing it from liſtleſs dejection, to an exertion of its powers. Such a diſappointment of his only hope ſhewed him all the horrors of his ſituation; and made him inſtantly *caſt about* how to eſcape from what he found he could not redreſs: inſtead therefore of betraying it, by his looks, which he knew were watched, he aſſumed an air of uncommon ſpirits, and telling every one that he had got a poſitive aſſurance of receiving the promiſed reward without any farther delay, he went to one of his tradeſmen, by that time he thought the news might have reached him, and taking up goods to a conſiderable amount, for which he confidently engaged to pay at a fixed and ſhort day, no ſooner got them into his poſſeſſion, than he ſold them privately at half price, and

and packing up whatever he could carry with him, fled beyond the reach of his creditors; and ſo proved how far his late conduct had proceeded, as he profeſſed, from his high regard to moral virtue and religion.

The agitation and horrors of his mind, from the time he had reſolved upon flight, till he had effected it, may be eaſily conceived. Whether the preſent ſafety, it procured him, gave him any laſting relief, I had not an opportunity of ſeeing, as *I quitted his ſervice*, at the inn, where he took a poſt-chaiſe to get off; though it is moſt probable, that after the firſt hurry of his ſpirits ſubſided, a ſenſe of the various villainies, by which he had brought himſelf to ſuch a ſtate of exile, imbittered the very bleſſing of liberty, and kept his mind in ſlavery, though his body was free.

CHAP. XI.

CHRYSAL again changes his ſervice. His new maſter is obliged to pay expedition fees, to get over artificial delays. He and his miſtreſs ſet out on a long journey, to do what might have been better done at home. CHRYSAL makes ſome intereſting reflections, on a moſt important ſubject. Story of CHRYSAL's maſter. CHRYSAL continues his reflections on the ſame ſubject, which he conſiders in a farther, and moſt affecting point of view. CHRYSAL changes his ſervice.

MY late maſter had ſcarce decamped, when a young gentleman came into the inn, and ordering a *chaiſe and four* to be got ready with the utmoſt expedition, gave my new maſter a bank-note to pay for it, *in the change of which he received me.*

The anxiety which my *new* maſter expreſſed to have the grooms make haſte, was a ſufficient reaſon for them to practiſe every delay they could deviſe, in order to extort expedition-fees; at which they were ſo expert, that he was forced to give them almoſt as much as he paid for the chaiſe, before he could get it to ſtir.

When

When at length every thing was ſettled, he directed them to a particular place, where an hackney-coach waited for him, out of which he received a young lady, with a couple of ſmall bundles, and then bade the poſtilions drive on; but they had no ſooner got out of the town, than he changed his orders, and directed them to take another road. This occaſioned a new delay. The fellows alledged their being obliged to go where their maſter had ordered them, and nowhere elſe; and made ſo many difficulties, that, as they expected, my maſter was compelled to purchaſe their compliance, at their own price

All obſtacles being thus got over, he turned to the young lady, who ſat trembling, and panting by his ſide, and embracing her tenderly, "Now, my deareſt "love," (ſaid he) "all our fears are over. Should we "be even traced to the inn, this turn will effectually "baffle all purſuit."

"I wiſh it may," (anſwered ſhe) "but I ſhall never "think myſelf ſafe, till I am abſolutely out of their "reach, and all is over."

The converſation of lovers is agreeable only to themſelves! The reſt of their's for two days, as they flew rather than travelled (for which expedition they paid ſufficiently, every ſet of poſtilions giving the word to the next) will not bear repetition. As ſoon as they got to the end of their journey, they put an end to their moſt immediate fears alſo, by a marriage, which might have been performed with a much greater probability of ſucceſs at home, had not a poſitive law prevented it.

I ſee your ſurprize at my ſaying that a *poſitive law* prevented marriage, as the proſperity of the community depends in the firſt degree on the promotion of that ſtate. But ſo it happens in human affairs, that the true intereſt of the people is not always the firſt object of the laws made for their government.

Though too general experience confirms this remark, it is neceſſary to explain the particular circumſtance, that gives occaſion to it in this inſtance.

The firſt end of marriage is the propagation of the ſpecies, in the manner moſt agreeable to reaſon, and likely to produce the happineſs of the parties, as well

as

as the population of the ſtate. As the paſſions, which lead to this end, are ſtrongeſt before reaſon has acquired ſtrength to direct them, it is neceſſary that they ſhould be ſubject to the direction of others who may be better qualified to diſcern and promote their intereſt. This right of direction naturally belongs to thoſe, who are moſt intimately concerned in that intereſt, as affecting a part of themſelves; and hence, among every people upon the earth, however differing in other reſpects and cuſtoms, this right of directing the matrimonial choice has always belonged to the parents; till maturity of age may be preſumed to ripen judgment, and ſo remove the neceſſity upon which it is founded.

But however evident this right is, the paſſions of youth ſo often rebel againſt it, that it was found neceſſary to enforce it by expreſs laws. Theſe laws though the profeſſed end of which is to make marriage happy, ſhould never be perverted to the unnatural purpoſe of preventing it entirely, by clogging it with ſuch unneceſſary and unreaſonable reſtrictions, as tend to ſubjugate not only natural liberty, but alſo the higheſt intereſt of the ſtate, which depends upon population, to avarice, caprice, or pride of family in parents; or to views of intereſt in thoſe appointed to ſupply their place.

The particular caſe of my maſter, which gave occaſion to theſe reflections, was this. He was the younger ſon of a noble family, to the honours of which his riſing virtues promiſed to add new luſtre. Youthful inclination had firſt attached him to this lady, whoſe merits upon acquaintance confirmed that attachment, more than her very large fortune. Such a marriage could not fail to meet the approbation of reaſon, and paternal prudence. Accordingly every neceſſary preliminary was agreed upon, when the ſudden death of her father threw in legal obſtacles, which threatened to prevent it, at leaſt for a longer time than youthful impatience could bear. For, as he had not actually ſigned to his conſent, thoſe to whom the care of his daughter devolved, thought proper to exert the right which the law gave them of objecting to the diſparity between

between her fortune and that of her lover, and ſo break off a match evidently for their mutual advantage.

When the lovers found that all they could do to influence their compliance was ineffectual, they had recourſe to this expedient (which the ſage makers of the law had, perhaps inadvertently, left open) to evade it, by flying beyond its power; and there ſolemnized a marriage, which ſhould be valid at their return home, tho' entered into without any of the prudential cautions for ſecuring happineſs, which are cuſtomary on ſuch occaſions, and he had in vain offered to come into! ſo that the law, which was profeſſedly deſigned to prevent inconſiderate and unhappy marriages, in its effect deprived this, and the many marriages of the kind, of the means for procuring happineſs, which former laws, founded on reaſon, had provided for them.

It is not to be denied, but the evils, which were immediately alledged as the occaſion of this law, called aloud for remedy; but whether the remedy provided by it did not introduce an inconvenience of worſe conſequence to the public than thoſe evils, is not ſo clear a caſe. Whatever reſtrictions might have been thought neceſſary, in worldly wiſdom, to prevent ſecret marriages, by which either the honours of families might be ſuppoſed to ſuffer diminution, or their fortunes fall a prey to mercenary deſign, where theſe conſiderations interfere not, ſuch reſtrictions ſhould never, in good policy, extend.

On the contrary every impediment and delay, *not immediately proceeding from moral neceſſity*, ſhould be removed; and the ſtate of matrimony encouraged by ſuch honours and advantages as ſhould counterbalance the inconveniencies of it, to perſons labouring under circumſtances of indigence; by which means, the inferiour ranks of the people, whoſe numbers make the ſtrength of a ſtate, would be delivered from the difficulties and fears which at preſent deter them from entering into matrimony, to the heavy loſs of the community, and the immediate ruin of ſuch numbers of both ſexes, whoſe natural paſſions, debarred from this, their only proper reſource, lead them into ſuch vices, as defeat the end of their creation, and make

them a reproach to humanity. How many infants would daily be ſaved from the moſt unnatural murder, to the ornament and advantage of their country, could the wretched parents have ſaved their own ſhame by marriage? How many females, who offer themſelves in the highways to brutal proſtitution, periſhing with cold, hunger, and diſeaſe, might have been the happy mothers of many children, and performed all the duties of their ſtation in virtuous eſteem, had not their being hindered from marrying, *by impediments made by law*, betrayed them to deſtruction.

As ſoon as my maſter had thus accompliſhed the end of his journey, he ſet out on his return, to enjoy the fruits of it at home. But I continued not in his poſſeſſion to ſee much of that mutual happineſs which his marriage promiſed, *being borrowed* from him on the road, by a gentleman of his acquaintance, who had been bubbled out of all his money at an horſe-race, and was now *fighting his way* to town, by running in debt at every inn, and raiſing contributions thus on all he met of whom he had the leaſt knowledge.

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL's new maſter ſtrikes out an adventure. He is ſmitten with a girl in a travelling-waggon, and changes his appearance to get admiſſion to her. Account of the company in the waggon. A good natured miſtake of one of the paſſengers gives occaſion for a broil, which is put an end to by an accident that does not mend the matter.

DISTRESSING as ſuch a ſituation would have been to another, cuſtom had made it ſo familiar to my *new* maſter, that he thought nothing of it, but travelled on with his equipage, as unconcerned, and ready to engage in any mad freak, as if his pockets were full of money. Nor was he long without an opportunity of indulging his diſpoſition.

As he was rolling careleſsly along, his chariot was ſtopped in a narrow part of the road, by one of thoſe travelling-

travelling-waggons, whoſe unwieldy weight gives them the privilege of taking place of their betters. Such a circumſtance naturally made the travellers *in both carriages* look out, when he was ſtruck with the uncommon beauty of a young creature in the waggon, whoſe charms in the firſt opening of their bloom gave ſcope to imagination to paint a proſpect if poſſible beyond their preſent perfection.

Such temptation could ſcarce be reſiſted by one who had reaſoned his paſſions into the beſt ſubjection, much leſs by him, who blindly obeyed them in, or rather ſtimulated them to, their utmoſt exceſs. He no ſooner ſaw, therefore, than he reſolved to *have* her by any means. The firſt thing to be done, for this pious purpoſe, was to change his appearance, in order to get into her company, as the leaſt ſuſpicion of his rank would directly *blow* his deſign. But this was no difficulty. He was well accuſtomed to lay it down; and the meaneſt character in life ſat as naturally upon him as his own.

Accordingly as ſoon as his chariot paſſed the waggon, he drove on furiouſly, till he was out of ſight, when he alighted, and changing cloaths with one of his ſervants out of livery, ordered them to leave the great road, and wait for him at an inn, ſome miles diſtance acroſs the country.

Thus equipped for his enterprize, he walked on leiſurely, like a common traveller, till he was overtaken by the waggon, the driver of which *plied* him in the uſual way to take a place, which after ſome affected difficulties he agreed to. But the greateſt difficulty aroſe not from him. The waggon was already ſo full, that when the driver mentioned taking in another, the paſſengers all cried out againſt it with one voice. But his authority was too abſolute to be reſiſted. He fixed his ladder, and ordered them to make room, barely condeſcending to ſay, that it was for a gentleman, who had been taken ſuddenly ill and wanted to go only to the next village. This circumſtance, though treated with brutal diſregard by the reſt, had an immediate effect upon the tender diſpoſition of his deſtined prey, who ſqueezing cloſer to her mo-

ther, he crept into his neſt, and ſettled himſelf as conveniently as he could next to her in the ſtraw.

The company into which he had thus thruſt himſelf, ſeemed to be a repreſentative of all the heteroclite characters of the age. Beſide the young female, whoſe appearance had attracted him, and her mother, a plain good-looking woman, it conſiſted of a mountebank-doctor, and his zany, a methodiſt preacher, a ſtrolling actor and actreſs, a fat ale-wife, a ſervant-maid, who was going to *London* to repair a cracked reputation, a recruiting ſerjeant, and two recruits, an outlaw'd ſmuggler, and a broken exciſeman.

Though my maſter could not at firſt view diſtinguiſh all their different characters, ſome of them were ſo ſtrongly marked, that he promiſed himſelf the higheſt entertainment from the claſhing which he concluded muſt inevitably ariſe in ſuch a groupe, and was reſolved to promote, upon the firſt occaſion. But an accident ſoon gave him that pleaſure, without the trouble of planning for it.

As the weather was warm, and few of the company could be ſuſpected of the delicacy of changing their cloaths often, it may be ſuppoſed that every favour which aroſe among them was not purely aromatick. My maſter had not been many minutes in his place, when the various odours fuming round him, had ſuch an effect upon his ſenſes, that he undeſignedly breathed a wiſh for a bottle of *ſpirits*.

As he had been introduced under the pretence of being ſick, the ale-wife, who happened to be near him, miſtook his meaning, and thought he wanted a *dram*, not once dreaming of any other uſe of ſpirits. Pulling out a flaſk therefore from under her coat, in the height of good-nature, Spirits! (ſaid ſhe) they are poiſonous ſtuff. Here is what will do you more good by half! Then drawing the cork, and taking a ſup, to ſhew him that it was not poiſon, "Drink "ſome of this," (continued ſhe, reaching him the flaſk) "and I'll warrant it will *ſettle* you. It is right "*Hollands*."

Before my maſter had time either to accept or refuſe her offer, the actor, who ſat between them, *ſmoaked* her

her miſtake, and intercepting the bottle, as ſhe reached acroſs him, cried out in triumph,

" *Bravo, my queen, your gin from* Holland *pure,*
" *My ſtomach ſooner than his head will cure.*"—

Then taking a large *go down*, or two, " *Here, Belvi-*
" *dera,*" (added he, giving the bottle to the actreſs)
" *in this friendly cup drown all your ſorrows!—Drink,*
" *as you love me, deep.*"

His faithful mate could not diſobey ſuch a command. She took the bottle, and lifting it to her head, " *Thus to the bottom*" (ſaid ſhe) " *though it*
" *were a mile!*"

But ſhe was interrupted in her intention by the ſmuggler, who lay at her feet, and no ſooner ſmelled the dear liquor, than he raiſed his head, and perceiving what ſhe was about, " Avaſt haling there," (cried he, ſnatching the bottle from her mouth) " or " you'll pump the ſcupper dry." And then going to put it to his own, " Hold" (ſaid the exciſeman, catching his hand with the ſame deſign) " I ſeize this " in the king's name, till I know whether it has paid " duty."

The mention of the word *duty* ſet the ſmuggler's blood on fire. " Duty! you ſhark!" (ſaid he, graſping the bottle faſter, and catching him in return by the throat with the other hand) " I'll ſeize you! " damn my eyes and limbs! I'll pay you the duty, " if you don't looſe your hold this moment, you " ſcoundrel! that I will."

Though he gripped the exciſeman's throat ſo hard, that he could not return his compliment in words, he ſcorned to yield the prize without one effort. Giving a twiſt therefore with all his force to wreſt it out of his antagoniſt's hand, though he could not ſucceed, he prevailed ſo far as to turn the mouth of the bottle downwards, by which means the contents were poured full in the face of the ſerjeant, who lay ſnoring on his back, with his mouth wide open,

Welcome, as ſuch a gueſt would have been in a proper manner, the intruſion thus unexpectedly was not ſo agreeable. He ſtarted up half ſuffocated; and belching his doſe, full in the face of one of the re-

cruits, "Blood anouns! fire! and fury! (ſputtered he) "What's the meaning of this?"

Juſt as he ſaid this, one of the wheels of the waggon came into a deep hole, with ſuch a plump, that though it did not abſolutely overſet, it tumbled all the paſſengers on top of one another; and inſtantly put a ſtop to the cries of the ale-wife, for the loſs of her liquor.

The ſcreams, oaths, and execrations of the whole company on this occaſion, would have given my maſter the higheſt delight, had he not been rather too nearly concerned to enjoy the *fun*, the fat ale-wife being thrown ſo full upon him, that he was unable to ſtir, though almoſt ſmothered, ſo that he could not help adding his cries to the concert.

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL's maſter experiences ſome comfortable conſequences from the obliging diſpoſition of the waggoner. He purſues his deſign, by paying common civility to his miſtreſs's mother. Converſation, and behaviour of the company. CHRYSAL's *maſter, in the purſuit of his deſign, meets an adventure that cools his paſſion, and reaſſembles the company, when they are all like to be at a fault, till one of them luckily hits off the ſcent.*

WHEN the driver had got his waggon out of the hole, and ſeen that all was ſafe about it, he came to know what was the matter with his paſſengers; and having *unpacked* them, my maſter had the pleaſure to hear the young woman propoſe to her mother to walk a little way, till ſome, not the moſt agreeable conſequences of the late diſaſter, ſhould blow off, to which ſhe readily conſented, as he prepared to accompany them, both for the ſame reaſon, and in order to have an opportunity of making an acquaintance, which he found he could not ſo well do in the waggon.

But the waggoner was not in the humour to give them that indulgence. When they called to him to let

let them down, he anſwered ſurlily, that they had not above a couple a miles to their inn; and if he were to ſtop thus every moment, he ſhould not get in, in time, and ſo without any farther ceremony whipped on his horſes. This was a ſevere diſappointment to my maſter, who ſoon grew ſo ſick, that he could not hold up his head, all the reſt of the way.

But the qualms of his ſtomach did not affect his conſcience, ſo as to make him in the leaſt alter his deſign. On his arrival at the inn, he made a pretence of the compaſſion which the young girl and her mother had expreſſed for him, to attach himſelf particularly to them, and ply them with wine, by way of return, which falſe modeſty made the mother take ſo freely, as gave him good hopes of ſucceſs.

The converſation and behaviour at ſupper was ſtrictly in the character of the company. The methodiſt made a long grace, and talk'd of religion, and temperance, while he eat more than any two at the table; and his eyes were gloating at the ſervant-maid, his fellow-traveller, who ſeemed to liſten to him with great complacency, and attention. The actor mimicked the methodiſt to his face, and lolled out his tongue, at every one elſe, as they happened to look another way. The actreſs ſpoke in heroicks, and turned up her noſe at every thing and every body. The ſmuggler and exciſeman ſat growling at each other, as if they meant to make a farther trial of their manhood. The ſerjeant talked of his exploits in the wars, and proved his valour by an oath at every word, which his two pupils liſtened to with looks of admiration, that ſhewed they deſigned to imitate that part of his example at leaſt. The ale-wife lamented the loſs of her gin, which, ſhe ſaid, ſhe could not replace with any like it, on the whole road. In ſhort, every body eat and talked; and talked and eat together, except the girl and her mother, who were quite loſt in aſtoniſhment, at a ſcene ſo new to them, and my maſter, whoſe thoughts were too much taken up with his own ſcheme, to mind any thing elſe.

Accordingly he ſtepped out, when ſupper was ended, and engaging the chamber-maid in his intereſt, by a

preſent of half a crown, ſhe ſhewed him where his miſtreſs was to lie, and promiſed to ſettle all things in the manner moſt convenient to his deſigns, by putting her and her mother in the bed next to the door, there being two in the room, and placing in the other the ſervant-maid, who paid for a bed to herſelf, as her modeſty would not permit her to ſleep with a ſtranger.

As ſoon as the houſe was quiet, and my maſter thought the wine which he had forced upon the mother, had ſecured her, he got up, and ſtealing in his ſhirt to the door of their chamber, found it open, upon which he entered, and crept to the bed, where he expected to find his miſtreſs, without ever conſidering what muſt be the conſequence of ſurprizing her, in ſuch a manner. Opening the curtains therefore ſoftly to feel by the difference of ſize, on which ſide ſhe lay, he had ſcarce put his hand upon the cloaths, when it was ſeized and gripped ſo hard, that he ſoon loſt all thought of every thing but diſengaging himſelf.

For this purpoſe, he made two or three efforts, but finding them ineffectual, and provoked at the pain his hand ſuffered in the ſtruggle, he diſcharged a blow with the other full on the face of his antagoniſt, who ſpringing directly out of bed, returned it with ſuch uſury, that my poor maſter fell ſprawling on the floor, where he roared out murder with all his might, in which he was immediately joined by thoſe who lay in the other bed, whoſe cries not only raiſed the houſe to his reſcue, but alſo ſaved him from farther violence, his antagoniſt deſiſting to beat him, in order to make his retreat in time.

When thoſe, who lay neareſt, were aſſembled at the door, half clad, and worſe armed with whatever they could catch up in their confuſion, prudential regard to perſonal ſafety made them all ſtop ſhort, every one finding ſome pretence to excuſe himſelf from going in firſt, and preſſing the poſt of honour upon his neighbour, till they at length raiſed their fears ſo high, that it was uncertain whether any one would venture in before day-light, though the cries ſtill continued, had not the ſmuggler, who did not wake to join them at firſt put an end to the debate. "Damn you all," (ſaid he,

ſnatching

ſnatching a candle from one, and a poker from another) " for a pack of cowardly lubbers! Will you " ſtand *jawing* here, while the people are murder- " ing?" Then ruſhing in, " Hallo!" (continued he) " what's going forward here, in the devil's name?"

The firſt object that preſented itſelf to his view, when he entered, was my maſter, who was ſtill upon the ground, unable, between fright and beating, to riſe. Advancing to him therefore. " Hip, meſſ- " mate!" (ſaid he, giving him a kick on his naked poſterious) " What cheer? Speak, if you are alive!"

The entrance of light reſtoring my maſter to ſome ſpirit, he raiſed his head at this ſalute, and making an effort to get up, " I ſcarce know whether I am, " or not," (anſwered he) " I have been ſo beaten by " that bitch of *Babel*; but ſhe ſhall pay for it, if I " ever recover."——

The place, where he was found, directing this accuſation to the perſon, in that bed, while ſome of them helped him up, the reſt gathered round it, and aſked the ſervant-maid, who lay there, what had induced her to treat the gentleman in ſuch a manner? But the mention of her name ſaved her the trouble of a reply. Before ſhe could ſpeak, " It was not ſhe!" (exclaimed my maſter) " I mean the old Beldam, " mother to the young Witch, whoſe babby-face " brought me among you, and who lay in this bed. " It was ſhe who abuſed me thus; or rather ſome " porter in woman's cloaths, who paſſed for her, for " no woman ever had ſuch ſtrength."——

" I believe you muſt be miſtaken, Sir," (interpoſed the exciſeman) " the people you mean are lying quiet- " ly in the next bed, and ſeem to be as much frighted " as you are hurt."——

" How!" (returned my maſter) " did they not lie " in this bed, next the door?"——

" No," (anſwered the other) " Mrs. *Margery* lies " here, as grave, and demure, as a whore at a chriſ- " tening."——

" Then the jade of a chamber-maid played me a " trick;" (replied my maſter) " But who the devil lay

" with her? For I am ſure ſhe was never able to do " what I have ſuffered."——

" As for that," (ſaid the actor, who had all the while been peeping round the bed) " I believe it will " be no hard matter to find it out." " Theſe breeches" (pulling a pair from under the bolſter) " muſt belong " to ſomebody, and will certainly point out her bed- " fellow, if the lady, like a true Amazon, did not " wear them herſelf."

CHAP. XIV.

The advantage of a ready aſſurance. The methodiſt accounts curiouſly for what he has done; and turning the tables upon CHRYSAL's *maſter, charges him with robbery, who is thereupon obliged to diſcover himſelf, but is contradicted by one of the company, who boaſts of a curious acquaintance with him in his own character. He is luckily recognized by a footman, whoſe maſter extricates him from his diſtreſs, and makes out the miſtakes, that had cauſed ſo much confuſion.*

AS the breeches were immediately known to belong to the methodiſt, they marched away directly to his bedſide, for he had not joined them, and aſked him how he had come to uſe the gentleman in that inhuman manner, ſhewing him my maſter, whom they had dragged along with them.

" Who I?" (anſwered the methodiſt, affecting all the ſurprize of innocence, and determined to deny what he thought could not be proved.) " Heaven " forbid that I ſhould uſe any fellow-chriſtian ill. " I engage not in ſuch broils. My warfare is with " the ſpirit."——

" And ſometimes with the fleſh too, I believe, " doctor!" (interrupted the actor.) " Nay it is in " vain to deny it! do you know theſe breeches, " doctor?"

" Breeches!" (exclaimed he, ſtarting up in real affright, and fumbling under his bolſter) " O they " are

" are gone! they are gone! I am robbed, ruined and " undone."——

" No, Doctor; they are not gone, as you ſee! But " the queſtion is, how they came under the young " woman's bed's-head, where this gentleman receiv- " ed this abuſe."

" Let him anſwer that!" (replied the methodiſt, never at a loſs for an impudent lie) " let him anſwer " that! all I know of the matter is this: Being diſturb- " ed in my reſt, I then knew not, but now plainly per- " ceive by what cauſe, I aroſe to pray, as is my cuſtom, " when hearing ſomebody go ſoftly out of the room, I " watched, as was my duty to prevent any evil, and " following the footſteps into another chamber caught " a man in the very fact of attempting the virtue of ſome " female, who lay there; upon which, expoſtulating " with him upon the heinouſneſs of ſuch a crime, he flew " at me ſo furiouſly, that I could ſcarce defend myſelf " from him, and if in the fray he received any hurt, " he muſt charge it to himſelf as he was the aggreſſor. " But this is not the whole; I now perceive, that I " was diſturbed out of my ſleep, by his ſtealing my " breeches, from under my head, which he accordingly " took with him into the room of that damſel, and " therefore I demand juſtice againſt him, for the at- " tempt, as well as for any loſs I may have ſuffered."—

Saying this, he took his breeches out of the actor's hand, and ſearching the pockets, " It is too true!" (continued he, gnaſhing his teeth, and wringing his hands in a perfect agony) " It is too true! I am ruined " and undone! I am robbed of all the money which I " had collected in my pilgrimage to relieve the poor " of the Lord. Twenty golden guineas, beſides ſilver " and other monies. Let him be ſearched! Let every " body be ſearched this moment. I muſt have my " money! I muſt have my money."

As my maſter was a ſtranger to them all; and not bleſſed with a face, that could beſpeak much favour, they began to give credit to the charge againſt him, eſpecially as the ſervant-maid corroborated it, by ſaying that he had alſo been rumaging for her pockets, when that worthy gentleman interrupted him (for women

men and all were now gathered to hear the matter canvaſſed) and talked of carrying him before a magiſtrate in the morning, that he might be ſent to jail.

At another time, ſuch a ſcene would have given him the higheſt pleaſure, but he had no taſte for *fun* now. Enraged therefore at the iniquity of ſuch a charge, and the inſolence with which they were proceeding to treat him, "Unhand me, at your perils, "you ſcoundrels" (ſaid he, telling them who he was) "Unhand me this moment. As for that infamous "villain, and his truſt, I charge you to ſecure them "directly, and ſend in my name for a magiſtrate.— "I'll make examples of them at leaſt."

You may conceive with what ſurprize they were all ſtruck at hearing this. However, as he gave only his bare word for it, all were not equally ready to believe him. "You, my friend *Scapegrace!*" (ſaid the actor, coming, and looking him full in the face) "No, "no, ſir. Say that to thoſe, who don't know him. "I am his intimate companion; his choſen among "ten thouſand. There is not a fine girl upon the "town but we have *bilked*; nor an houſe in the "*hundreds of Drury* where we have not *kicked up a* "*duſt*, together. He and I are *Pylades* and *Oreſtes*; "ſworn friends and brothers. No! no! that ſtroke "won't paſs upon me."

This made matters worſe than ever with my maſter, adding ridicule to inſult, which was poured upon him, in ſuch torrents from every mouth, that he could not ſpeak a word in his own defence. But his diſtreſs laſted not long. The ſervants of a gentleman, who luckily happened to lie at the inn that night, being raiſed by the uproar, one of them knew my maſter, through all his diſguiſes, "By your leave there!" (ſaid he, ruſhing through the croud, and ſhoving aſide ſome of them who had already laid hold of him) "Are you all mad, to uſe a gentleman in this man- "ner?" Then addreſſing himſelf to my maſter, "What "is the matter, pleaſe your honour? I am ſorry to "ſee your honour in ſuch a pickle. My maſter" (naming him) "is in the houſe, and will do you juſ- "tice. I'll run and call him up directly."

Such

Such a teſtimony inſtantly turned the ſcale, and made thoſe who were moſt inſolent to him before, now moſt officious to pay him reſpect, and attendance. Accordingly he was removed, without aſking his leave, into his own room, where they were preparing to humanize his appearance, when the gentleman entered.

Much as my maſter was above the weakneſs of ſhame, he could not avoid feeling ſomething like it, on being caught in ſuch a condition. He was ſitting on the ſide of the bed, covered only with the ragged remains of his ſhirt, which had been torn to pieces in the fray, daubed all over with blood and dirt, and beaten to ſuch a degree, that he ſcarce retained one feature of the *human face divine*, which had not loſt all likeneſs of the original.

The gentleman ſtarted at ſuch a ſpectacle, and ſtopped ſhort in doubt whether it could be he, till my maſter's voice ſatisfied him; when he gave orders to have every one concerned in the affair ſecured, and then ſeeing the poor ſufferer taken proper care of, and put to bed, he proceeded to inquire into the matter, the circumſtances of which appeared to be theſe.

The methodiſt having agreed with the ſervant-maid, his fellow-traveller, to have ſome *ſpiritual* converſation with her that night, ſhe promiſed to lie in the bed next the door, and therefore after the chamber-maid had aſſigned them their quarters, as ſhe had ſettled with my maſter, feigned ſome pretence to deſire a change, which the others readily conſented to. Accordingly as the methodiſt was ſecure of his reception, he came ſoon, and was got into bed to his *diſciple*, when my maſter made his attempt, whoſe hand he ſeized, in the manner I have related; and would have beaten him ſtill more ſeverely for his intruſion, had it not been for his crying out, upon which he retreated to his own bed in ſuch an hurry, to eſcape detection, that he forgot his breeches, which he had taken with him for fear ſome of his chamber-fellows ſhould ſearch them, and rob him of eight or ten guineas that he had picked up in the courſe of his preaching about the country, and the actor had made bold to take as lawful prize, when they fell into his hands, and afterwards

terwards found means to convey to his wife, for more ſecurity.

Every thing being thus cleared up, the gentleman adviſed my maſter to drop the affair, as proſecuting it would only expoſe him ſtill more, to which he willingly agreed, having no inclination for any farther trouble about it.

The methodiſt though was far from being ſo eaſily pacified, for the loſs of the fruits of his ſummer's labour in the vineyard, which he thought worſe of than a thouſand beatings, and was reſolved to recover, if poſſible, in ſpite of all their ſcoffs and inſults. But the detection, of the other part of his hiſtory, had ſo entirely deſtroyed his credit, that he found it in vain to perſiſt, eſpecially as the actor offered to make oath that he had that very evening applied to him, to borrow a ſhilling to pay his reckoning. Curſing them all therefore in the bitterneſs of his ſoul, he changed his route, and went upon another preaching progreſs in order to retrieve his loſs, in which pious work he prevailed upon his diſciple and fellow-ſufferer in ſhame, the ſervant-maid, whoſe pockets had eſcaped the pillagers, to accompany him.

By this time, the waggon was ready to ſet out, when the reſt of the company departed, except the actor, and his lady, who were ſo tired with that vulgar way of travelling, that they thought proper to continue their journey, in the ſtage-coach; and my maſter, who was laid up in ſalves, and flannels, and had loſt both ability and inclination to purſue his enterprize any farther.

CHAP.

CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAL *gives a ſtriking account of his maſter. He arrives in* London, *and pays a viſit to his miſtreſs. His curious method of courting. His miſtreſs makes him a preſent of half her fortune before hand, in return for which he promiſes to marry her next day, and then goes to his girl. Difference in his behaviour to the two naturally accounted for. An uncommon gueſt at a wedding, with as uncommon a manner of celebrating a nuptial-night, ſhew a ſtill more uncommon inſtance of matrimonial complaiſance.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

THE ſingularity of my maſter's character gave me a curioſity to take a view of his life, while he was ſleeping off ſome of the effects of his late adventure. He was born in a rank, that ſupported the fair hopes of honour, and advantage, which the firſt opening of his youth, univerſally raiſed. But an errour in his education blaſted all thoſe hopes in the bud, and drove him into every extreme of vice and folly, which it was deſigned to guard againſt.

The bad conſequences which are ſeen to attend indulging the paſſions too far, often lead weak minds to attempt ſuppreſſing them entirely, without conſidering that the crime is only in the exceſs. The difficulty and pain of this attempt throw ſuch a gloom over the whole appearance, as hides the native beauty of virtue, and makes it ſeem to be the ſource of unhappineſs, to thoſe who view it only in theſe effects, ſo as to terrify them from the purſuit of it.

On this errour pretended enthuſiaſts have in every age founded their influence, by enſlaving the mind to groundleſs terrours, which they never fail to turn to their own advantage. To the conduct of ſuch blind, and baſe guides, the mother of my maſter, to whom the ſole care of his education had fallen by the death of

of her husband, implicitly resigned herself, and of course her son, in return for which they flattered her fanaticism, and vanity together, with promises of breeding him up in the perfection of sanctity.

For this purpose, he was debarred from every innocent recreation, and harrassed with studies, improper for his age. His appetites were mortified by fasting; his rest was broken to chaunt hymns, and pray; nor was he allowed even to speak but in scripture-phrase; and all as the indispensible duties of virtue and religion.

Such a slavery naturally gave him so great an aversion to every thing that bore their names, that the moment he became his own master, he placed the supreme pleasure of his life, in acting in contradiction to them, by every instance of expensive and vicious excess, in which he squandered away the inheritance of his ancestors, and broke his constitution with a rapidity, that gave scandal to vice, put folly out of countenance, and made his name a bye-word in an age of excesses. And in this situation he was, when I came into his possession.

Though it was near noon before he awoke, the gentleman whose presence had so luckily relieved him the night before, waited to see him, when he compleated his kindness by lending him money to defray his expences up to town, upon which he sent for his equipage, and set off without farther concern at what had happened.

On his arrival in *London*, he drove directly to the last place, which any other man in his circumstances would have thought of going to. This was the house of a lady of large fortune, to whom he had paid his addresses, since his extravagance had dissipated his own; and with this peculiar honesty, that he never even pretended a regard to herself.

The success of such a courtship must appear improbable, but there is no accounting for the caprice of woman. She had taken a liking to him, which seemed to rise in proportion to the slights he shewed her, and was resolved to gratify, if only nominally, for she could expect no more, at the hazzard of every happiness of life.

It

It may be ſuppoſed that the ſight of him, in ſuch a condition, ſtruck her ſeverely. She flew to him, threw her arms around his neck, and bemoaned his misfortune in the moſt paſſionate terms. But that was not what he wanted. Shaking her off, without feigning the leaſt return to her fondneſs, "Pſha!" (ſaid he) "leave off this ſtuff; and let me know whether "you have got the money, I told you I ſhould want "to pay off thoſe debts of honour! If you have, and "will alſo give me up the reſt of your fortune, with-"out reſerve, I'll marry you."

"Will you?" (exclaimed ſhe, in rapture) "then "you have it, if it were ten times as much. Here "it is" (opening a bureau, and teaching him an handful of bank notes) "I *ſold out* half my fortune to "raiſe it, the very day you ſpoke to me."

"I wiſh I had known that" (ſaid he, putting the notes in his pocket) "and then I might have made "my excurſion into the country longer. Farewell! "I'll call upon you to-morrow evening, and conclude "the job. Do you have the hangman and halter "ready."

"What do you mean? I don't underſtand you."

"What ſhould I mean, but the parſon, and the "ring. Is not that an halter? and does not he hang "us up with it for life?"

"But can't you ſtay a few moments! I want to "know how you come in that condition!"

"It was only a ſcrape about a wench. I'll tell "you the particulars another time. My girl would "not forgive me, if ſhe knew I was ſo long in town, "without going to her."

"But will you certainly come to-morrow? I am "afraid you will diſappoint me, now you have got "what you wanted."

"Never fear! I have not got what I want, while "you have a ſhilling left in the world."

Saying which he walked away without deigning to take any farther leave.

But his behaviour was not ſo cavalier, where he was going. The moment he entered his miſtreſs's room, ſhe flew at him, not with the fondneſs of a dove.

dove. "So! (ſaid ſhe) "what bawdy-houſe have "you been breaking up now? You do well to come "to me in ſuch a pickle; but I'll ſee you damn'd be-"fore I take the trouble of nurſing you."

"Don't be in a paſſion, my love" (ſaid he, taking her in his arms, and giving her a kiſs) "It is no ſuch "thing. I fell among a gang of foot-pads, who a-"buſed me in this manner, becauſe I made reſiſtance."

"A very likely ſtory truly, invented, I ſuppoſe, to "excuſe your not bringing me money! but if that is "the caſe, you may go to the devil from whence you "came. I'll not be troubled with your company."

"No, my dear! I never come to you empty-hand-"ed, let me do as I will, elſewhere." With which words he pulled out one of the bank-notes, he had juſt got from the other, and giving it to her, put her at length in a good humour.

I ſee your indignation at a man's acting in ſuch a manner; but you could expect no other. The ſame baſeneſs of temper which could treat the other woman with inſult, naturally ſubmitted to be inſulted by this.

You imagine that his miſtreſs muſt have uncommon attractions! to give her ſuch power over him! You judge right. Her's were uncommon indeed. She had loſt her hair and teeth in a ſalivation; and was allowed to be the moſt profligate of her profeſſion; charms ſufficient to attach a man of his taſte.

My maſter having thus happily made his peace, the loving couple ſat down to their bottle as uſual, over which happening to mention his intended marriage the next day, her delicacy took ſuch offence, that ſhe poſitively refuſed to conſent to it, till he promiſed not only that ſhe ſhould be preſent, but alſo to return, and ſpend his wedding-night with her, to prove her triumph over the happy bride.

Accordingly he took her with him the next evening, and introducing her to the expecting fair one, "I "have brought my girl" (ſaid he) "to grace our nup-"tials. The dear creature inſiſted upon it; and you "know I can't refuſe her any thing." The bride elect was ſo enraptured at the thought of her approaching happineſs,

happineſs that ſhe had no ſenſe of the inſult, but received her with politeneſs, perhaps not without a mixture of pride on the occaſion.

There are ſome ſcenes, the extravagance of which *beggars deſcription.* I ſhall therefore only ſay, that the behaviour of the company was in character, during the ceremony, and entertainment, at the end of which the bridegroom alledging his promiſe to go back with his miſtreſs, the convenient bride not only conſented, but alſo propoſed preparing an apartment for her, in her own houſe, to ſave him that trouble for the future, and procure for herſelf the pleaſure of his company; a ſcheme that was actually carried into execution, while ſhe had an houſe to receive her; which was not very long, a continuance of the ſame extravagance that had diſſipated his own fortune ſoon diſſipating her's alſo.

It may be imagined that I did not remain long in the poſſeſſion of ſuch a maſter. He *loſt me*, the next evening after his marriage, on a bet, that he could repeat the *Lord's Prayer*, which he laid on purpoſe to loſe, in order to prove how entirely he had got rid of the prejudices of education.

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome reflections, not likely to be much regarded. His maſter pays a love-viſit to a young lady, whoſe father interpoſes unpolitely, and makes ſome out-of-the-way objections.* CHRYSAL's *maſter hits upon a ſcheme for getting over them. He propoſes marriage on certain terms, which are agreed to, and the day fixed at a little diſtance.*

I HAVE on former occaſions given you a ſufficient deſcription how *people of faſhion* ſpend their time in gaming-houſes, where, though every meeting produces new misfortunes to ſome of the company, there is ſuch a ſameneſs in the manner, as will not bear repetition, and muſt cloy any creature not abſolutely under

under infatuation, or obliged to make a trade of it for bread, as neither of which was the caſe of my *new* maſter, he left the company early, to purſue pleaſures, more in his own taſte.

In no inſtance are the contradictions in human conduct ſo ſtrongly ſhewn, as in that of man to woman. He who would loſe his life rather than violate the ſtricteſt principles of honour, or honeſty (as they are abſurdly diſtinguiſhed from each other) in his intercourſe with another man, not only ſcruples not to ſtudy deceit, and practiſe the blackeſt and baſeſt villainies againſt woman; but with even glory in the ſucceſs of them, when accompliſhed, without ſhewing remorſe in himſelf, or meeting reproof from others.

The reaſon of this is generally ſaid to be man's partiality to his own cauſe, which as he has the power of judging in his hands, whether by uſurpation or right, it matters not, makes him pardon in others, the crime he would be glad to commit himſelf.

But without exculpating him in the leaſt, woman bears an heavy ſhare in the blame of her ſex's ruin. I mean not here by her immediate conſent in her own caſe, but by the countenance which ſhe ſhews to the perpetrators of it, in that of others; it being as certain in fact, as it is groſs and abſurd to thought, that the ſureſt recommendation to the general favour of women is the fame of having ruined numbers of them.

Whether this proceeds from a vain ambition of triumphing over the triumpher, or an affectation of diſdaining to eſpouſe the cauſe of the fallen, as having forfeited the common regards of humanity, makes no difference in the conſequence, whatever it may in the crime, as it opens an opportunity to the ſpoiler to extend his conqueſts often upon themſelves, in the midſt of their ſecurity; whereas, would woman ſhew a true ſenſe of the honour of their ſex, by refuſing every kind of intercourſe with ſuch as had ever violated it, man's partiality to himſelf would loſe its effect, and all his deſigns upon them be reſtrained within the proper boundaries of virtue.

From the place, where I came into the poſſeſſion of *my new* maſter, he went to pay a viſit to a young lady of

of uncommon beauty and merit, whom he was violently in love with; that is, he was earneſtly bent upon gratifying his deſire for her, at the expence of her ruin; an enterpriſe for which he was eminently qualified, being poſſeſſed of all the advantages of youth, fortune and addreſs, and abſolutely free from every reſtraint of principle, as he had proved on ſeveral ſucceſsful occaſions of the ſame kind. The reception he met ſhewed that he had made an intereſt in her heart; but all his experience in the ſcience of intrigue could not elude the vigilance of her virtue for a moment, nor find the leaſt opening for any attack upon her honour.

Such difficulties only redoubled his ardour. As he was conſidering therefore next morning, how he ſhould proceed, he was interrupted in his meditations by a viſit from his miſtreſs's father. After ſome time ſpent in common chat, "I have taken the liberty to wait "upon you, ſir," (ſaid the father) "about an affair, "the importance of which, to my happineſs, will "apologize for any ſeeming unpoliteneſs in it. I have "for ſome time taken notice of the frequency of "your viſits to my houſe, the honour of which I am "juſtly ſenſible of, but not ſo far dazzled by, but I "can ſee the motive of them through it; and there-"fore muſt for many reaſons beg leave to deſire that "you will diſcontinue them."

"I——I——I don't underſtand you, ſir;" (anſwered my maſter, a good deal diſconcerted at ſo unexpected an addreſs) "I have no motive that I deſire to "conceal, or is any way inconſiſtent with the cha-"racter of a gentleman."

"Pardon me, ſir," (replied the other) "I mean no "ſuch thing. But yet, what may be thought conſiſ-"tent with that character in ſome things, may be very "inconſiſtent with the happineſs of a father. To be "plain, ſir, I am not ſo unacquainted with the world, "but I can ſee that all your viſits are paid to my "daughter; and as ſhe is not upon a level with you "either in family, or fortune, for a wife, I muſt re-"peat my requeſt, that you will drop a purſuit, "which muſt therefore have another view."

"You

" You do injuſtice to your daughter," (returned my maſter, recovered from his ſurpriſe, and convinced that it was in vain to diſſemble any longer) " to ſay " that ſhe is not upon a level with any man alive. I " am above the vain pride of family; and as to for- " tune, my own ſatisfies me, without hazarding my " happineſs, to ſeek for more."

" Theſe" (ſaid the lady's father) " are truly the " ſentiments of a gentleman, nor have I any doubt of " the ſincerity with which you declare them. But " there are other conſiderations that make it impoſſi- " ble to carry them into execution. You, and my " daughter, profeſs different principles of religion; " and as I can by no means expect that you ſhould " change your's, ſo, I hope, ſhe is too firmly eſtab- " liſhed in her's, to quit them for any worldly honour, " or advantage."

This was a ſtroke my maſter was not prepared for. He acquieſced therefore ſeemingly, with the beſt grace he could, to avoid entering more explicitly into the ſubject, till he ſhould have time to concert meaſures for getting over this new difficulty, for his honour was now piqued; and he reſolved to ſtop at nothing, if only to puniſh the inſolence of her father, in preſuming to forbid him his houſe.

Accordingly, after revolving a variety of ſchemes, he fixed upon one, which he thought could not fail. Big with this hope, he went next morning to wait upon his miſtreſs, notwithſtanding the interdiction of her father, and finding her alone, after ſome moments of mutual confuſion, on the circumſtances of ſuch a meeting, " I—I—I—I am come, madam" (ſaid my maſter, heſitating, and bluſhing as he ſpoke) " I am " come in conſequence of what paſſed between your " father and me yeſterday, of which I preſume he " has informed you. It never was my deſign to diſ- " avow a paſſion, upon which depends the happineſs " of my life. I only waited till ſome particular cir- " cumſtances ſhould enable me to declare it with " more convenience. But as he has made the diſco- " very, that reſerve is no longer neceſſary. If there- " fore, madam, I can be ſo happy, as to find favour

" in

" in your ſight, all his objections I preſume will be " removed by my offering to marry you directly; on " this ſole condition, that our marriage ſhall be kept " inviolably ſecret, till I have accompliſhed ſome af- " fairs, to which you muſt be ſenſible, the difference " of our religions would be a prejudice. The cere- " mony ſhall be performed by any clergyman you " pleaſe, in the preſence of your father, and any other " witneſſes in whoſe ſecrecy we can confide, and eve- " ry thing done that can convince you of the ſincerity " and honour of my attachment. Speak then, dear- " eſt madam, and make me happy, by complying with " a propoſal, that has your happineſs in view, equally " with my own."

" I ſhould be unworthy of the honour you do me" (anſwered ſhe, the bluſh of true modeſty heightening the charms of her beauty) " If I could let it interfere " with ſuperior obligations. When the approbation " of my father gives a proper ſanction to your ap- " plication to me, you will probably find no great " difficulty, in making my inclination go hand in " hand with my duty."

Her father juſt then entering, relieved her from the embarraſſment of any farther converſation upon ſo delicate a ſubject; and ſhe withdrew. But my maſter was under no ſuch difficulty. Encouraged by a reply ſo favourable to his hopes, he directly repeated his propoſal to her father, who promiſed him a deciſive anſwer, next morning.

As the manner of his reception left him no room to doubt of his ſucceſs, he went again, at the time appointed, when the father gave his conſent without difficulty, as did his miſtreſs, ſtipulating only for a ſhort delay, till ſhe ſhould return from the wedding of a young lady, her couſin, who lived at ſome diſtance in the country, and had engaged her to attend her upon that occaſion. As he could make no juſt objection to this, however diſagreeable ſuſpenſion of his hopes, he conſented with a compliment, that his reſolution was too firmly fixed, for any time to make him change it, and then took his leave, exulting at the ſucceſs of his project.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL's maſter is privately married. Not ſatisfied with one wife for love, he wants another for money. He propoſes the matter to his wife, on whoſe refuſal, he diſcloſes his grand ſcheme; in which, deep as it is laid, he has the mortification to find himſelf anticipated, and his own weapons turned upon himſelf. Conſequences of this diſcovery. CHRYSAL's maſter takes a common method of ſilencing ſcandal. CHRYSAL changes his ſervice.

THE ſmiles of hope make the ſunſhine of life, as the mind is then too intent upon the object in expectation, to ſee the inconveniencies which afterwards imbitter the enjoyment of it. The abſence of his miſtreſs, though conſiderably longer, than he had apprehended, paſſed away pleaſantly in the thought of his approaching happineſs. As ſoon as ſhe returned, therefore, he directly claimed the performance of her promiſe, to which all parties conſenting, they were married by his own chaplain, in the private manner he deſired.

Poſſeſſed thus of his wiſhes, his next care was to enjoy them, with the moſt convenience to himſelf. For this purpoſe, he took an houſe, next to his own; and opening a ſecret communication between them, he removed her thither, as he could not take her directly home, without declaring his marriage.

Mortifying, as the myſterious appearance of ſuch a ſituation muſt have been to her, ſhe made no objection, but complied implicitly, in that and every thing elſe, as if ſhe had no will, but his. Paſſions merely ſenſual are ſoon ſated. Though the reſemblance of this intercourſe to an intrigue heightened the pleaſure of it, he had not carried it on long, when an opportunity of marrying to great advantage, in the phraſe of the world, awoke his ambition, and gave his wiſhes another turn.

After

After ſome little conflict with himſelf, in which however the object in view proved too powerful for that in poſſeſſion, he reſolved to break the matter to his wife. Accordingly, as they ſat together one morning at breakfaſt, after ſome expreſſions of uncommon tenderneſs, "The regard, which my deareſt girl has always ſhewn for me" (ſaid he, bluſhing at his own baſeneſs as he ſpoke) "convinces me that ſhe will "not only take pleaſure to hear of any thing to my "advantage, but alſo forward it as far, as may be in "her power."

"I hope no action of my life," (anſwered ſhe, ſurprized at his ſpeaking in ſuch a manner) "ſince I "have been married to you, has given any reaſon to "doubt either my duty or affection, that you ſhould "imagine ſuch a preface neceſſary to introduce what-"ever you think proper to command."

"Very true, my deareſt life. But—but—but there "are ſome things, the nature of which requires deli-"cacy, even to you, whoſe underſtanding is ſuperior "to the foibles of your ſex. You know the young "*lady Worth-land!* I have received intimation that "my addreſſes would not be unacceptable to her. "Now as her rank and fortune would entitle me to ex-"pect the firſt honours in the ſtate, I have that confi-"dence in the attachment and love of my deareſt girl, "as to think that you will not oppoſe my intereſt."—

"As how?" (replied ſhe eagerly, alarmed at the hint, but unwilling to think ſo meanly of him, as to underſtand it) "As how? What intereſt can you poſ-"ſibly have in her rank and fortune?"——

"The intereſt, which the law gives an huſband. "Poſſeſſion! abſolute poſſeſſion of the whole."——

"An huſband? Good God! how can that be? Are "you not already married?"——

"True, my deareſt life! but as that marriage is a "ſecret, if it can be kept ſo, it will be no obſtacle. "You ſhall remain as you are, the wife of my love; "and I will be only the huſband of her fortune."—

"How you men, whoſe minds are ſtronger, take "pleaſure in playing with the weakneſs of women! "The very mention of ſuch a thing even in jeſt," (for

it is impoſſible you can be ſerious) " ſtrikes me with " horror."——

" In jeſt! I am ſerious upon my honour, and ex- " pect your immediate compliance, as a proof of your " duty and affection."——

" And can you mention honour, in the ſame breath " with ſuch a baſe propoſal? What a profanation of " the word? But whether you are ſerious, or not, I " muſt be ſo, on ſuch an occaſion; and therefore I " declare that I never will ſacrifice both honour and " conſcience, by giving what you are pleaſed to call " a proof of duty, and affection, but what would " really prove that I had neither."

" This romantick ſpirit, child, much as you think " it becomes you, is all thrown away. I am deter- " mined; and you muſt ſubmit. But let me tell you, " that on the manner of that ſubmiſſion depends your " future welfare. If you comply properly with my " propoſal, I will make a ſettlement upon you, that " ſhall exceed any expectations you could naturally " have had in life, and remain your huſband, in every " thing but the empty name. But if you attempt " making the leaſt oppoſition to my will, I caſt you off " from this moment to beggary and ſhame; nor ſhall " any late repentance ever bring me to receive you " again; ſo conſider the conſequence, before you " raſhly run upon your ruin; I ſhall expect your final " reſolution to-morrow."

" For that, you need not wait a moment. I fear " no conſequence that can attend my doing what is " right. The duty of obedience, I have fulfilled in its " utmoſt extent, by immuring myſelf thus, and for- " feiting my good name to keep your ſecret; but " while my conſcience witneſſed for the purity of my " heart, I regarded not the preſent cenſure of the " world, no more than I do now, from the ſame prin- " ciple of virtuous reſolution, your vain threats, for " in ſuch a light, the laws of my country enable me to " hold them."——

" The laws of your country, madam! Then claim " their protection if you pleaſe; but you will find " that they afford none to you. Such marriages as

" your's,

" your's, between people profeſſing different religions, " are made void by thoſe laws, and therefore if you " think proper to depend upon them, I give you this " notice, that you have nothing to expect from me, " but what they ſhall procure you."——

" And was this your motive" (returned ſhe, with a ſpirit raiſed by indignation) " for deſiring a private " marriage? Impoſſible! you could not, cannot be ſo " baſe. You only have a mind to try my reſolution, " which you ſhall ever find immoveable in this, and " every cauſe of virtue and honour."——

" Madam, I have no more time to trifle in this " manner; therefore once more I deſire you to let me " know your final determination; for, notwithſtanding " this behaviour, I ſtill have ſuch a regard for you, " that I am unwilling to take an anſwer which muſt " ſeparate us for ever. Think then, before you ſpeak; " and let my making you this generous offer, and pre- " venting your expoſing yourſelf in vain, teach you a " return of proper gratitude."——

" I want not a moment to determine between vir- " tue and vice, infamy and honour."

" Then take the conſequence; and blame yourſelf, " when it is too late."——

" I will; if any blame falls on me. And now that " I ſee you are ſerious, in return for the notice you " have ſo generouſly given me, I let you know, that I " have obviated the advantage you flatter yourſelf you " have over me, by conforming *legally* to your religion, " before I was married to you."——

" Confuſion! what is that you ſay? When, where " did you conform?"——

" When I went to the wedding of my couſin; as " you will find upon enquiry, which I adviſe you to " make, before you proceed farther in a ſcheme, that " can only expoſe you to worſe infamy than that, with " which you threatened me."

" Infernal witch! Was this your love?"——

" No; it was the prudence of my friends."

" My love could harbour no doubt of you; but they " knew you better; and took this honeſt, wiſe precau- " tion to guard againſt villainy; which I now am ſen-

" ſible they foreſaw; and therefore as you have " thought proper to refer me to the law, I now tell " you that I will immediately claim its protection, and " declare my marriage, nor ſuffer any longer in the " opinion of the world, by a ſecreſy, that was en- " joined for ſo baſe a purpoſe; by which I ſhall at " leaſt have the ſatisfaction of ſaving another woman " from falling into the ſnare laid for her."——

Saying this, ſhe flung out of the room, to conceal tears, which ſhe thought would betray a weakneſs unworthy of her, and could no longer reſtrain.

The nature of my maſter's meditations on this diſcovery may be eaſily conceived. He curſed that fooliſh fondneſs, which had thus led him blindfold into his own ſnare; and damn'd all womankind, in revenge for being foiled at his own weapons by one of the ſex.

When he had vented his rage, in this manner for ſome time, a ſudden gleam of hope flatter'd him, that what ſhe ſaid might poſſibly have been only the inſtantaneous ſuggeſtion of reſentment and deſpair, without being really true. Pleaſed with the thought, he ſent directly to make the proper enquiry, the reſult of which confirmed the defeat of all his deſigns. But this was not the only mortification he ſuffer'd. His wife, the moment ſhe left him, went to her father, and diſcovering to him her huſband's baſeneſs, he ſupported her in her reſolution of declaring her marriage, as the moſt proper means to prevent his forming any farther ſchemes againſt her.

The conſequence is obvious. The publick received ſuch a curious piece of ſcandal with pleaſure; and paid reſpect to his wife, if only to ſhew contempt for him; particularly the women, who made her's the cauſe of the ſex, as he had precluded all farther deſigns upon himſelf, by marriage.

This though, however flattering to her vanity and reſentment at the time, only widened a breach that ſhe wiſhed to cloſe. His pride was piqued to diſappoint her deſign, as ſhe had his, and he left her to languiſh out the reſt of her life in worſe than widowhood, and repent of the folly of attempting to attach to herſelf a man who ſhe knew had betrayed others of the ſex.

As

As for my maſter, this detection made him deſperate. He threw off every appearance of regard even to common decency, which he thought could no longer be of uſe to him, and determined to bear down ſcandal, by glorying in his vices; in the performance of which gallant reſolution, he gave me to a ſtage-dancer, who gave me to an half-pay officer, who gave me to a tavern-keeper, &c.—*Vol.* II.—*Page* 98.——

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL *gives an account of certain intereſting occurrences. An extraordinary definition of a common word. Great expectations diſappointed. The conſequence of planning in the cloſet the operations of the field, with the origin of that ſagacious practice.*

(CHRYSAL'*s maſter in the courſe of his journey from* VIENNA *to* LISBON, *falls in with one of the armies engaged in carrying on the war.)*

"The army through which my maſter was obliged "to paſs, as I have ſaid, though paid by *England*, and "the flower of it compoſed of *Britons*, was command-"ed by a *German* general, in diſgraceful acknowledg-"ment of the want of military merit equal to ſuch a "charge, in the natives."—*Vol.* II.—*Page* 215.

Such an indignity to a people ever famed in war, and jealous of their honour, muſt appear unaccountable; but the web of human policy is woven in ſo myſterious a manner as to reconcile inconſiſtencies ſtill harder to be accounted for on the common principles of reaſon

When this army was firſt formed, the command of it was given to a *Briton*, whoſe military abilities had in their opening dawn ſaved his country from ruin, and now in their meridian promiſed to raiſe his name to an equality in glory, with thoſe in moſt renown, in the long liſt of heroes; but the wiſdom of thoſe meaſures, by which the world is governed, defeated expectations ſo juſtly founded, and deprived his country for ever of the advantage of ſuch abilities.

As the profeſſed deſign of this army was only to *obſerve* the motions of the *French*, and defend the allies of *England* from their attacks, it was judged ſufficient to make it barely of ſuch force, as might effect that defence, with the aſſiſtance of thoſe allies themſelves. Though an inferior army may act ſucceſsfully on the defenſive in repelling an immediate aſſault upon itſelf, yet where its attention is extended to the defence of diſtant objects, the neceſſity of dividing ſuch inferior ſtrength, enhances the diſproportion, ſo as not only to defeat the deſign, but alſo often to involve the defenders, in the ruin they were meant to avert from others.

The danger of ſuch an event was evident in the preſent caſe, but ſome diviſions in the *Engliſh* councils made it impoſſible to obviate it, by making the force of the army equal to the end, it was appointed for; certain *patriots* having oppoſed the forming of any ſuch army at all, with ſo plauſible, and popular arguments, that the ſovereign was obliged to be ſatisfied for the preſent, with the ſhadow of one, as I may ſay, in expectation of being able to reinforce it, by degrees, as the *patriots* expected to make their compliance with ſuch a meaſure, the means for gaining the end of their patriotiſm, that is, raiſing themſelves to power.

You ſeem ſurprized at my calling men, who could act with ſuch a view, and oppoſe a meaſure, which I have ſaid to be founded on every motive of honour and juſtice, by the reſpectable name of *patriots*. But in this, as in very many other things, the name remains after the idea it was deſigned to repreſent is loſt. *Patriotiſm*, that once meant the nobleſt exertion of diſintereſted virtue, by which every attention to private advantage was ſacrificed to the publick good, ſignifies now no more, than an oppoſition to the meaſures of government, whether right or wrong, ſupported by ſuch pretences, as are moſt likely to inflame the paſſions of the people, till the governors are ſo embarraſſed, as to be obliged to admit the patriots to a ſhare of their power, when they directly throw off the maſk, for ſome other to take up; and do themſelves the very things, which they before declaimed againſt with ſuch noiſe and vehemence.

hemence. By this general deſcription I do not abſolutely preclude a few particular exceptions; nor deny the merit of ſome men, who even in modern times have deſerved the name, in all the honour of its original meaning.

The nature of ſuch a command, and the improbability of its ſucceſs, would have deterred any man from accepting it, who was not actuated by principles ſo truly patriotic, as to make him diſregard every other motive, for the mere poſſibility of ſerving his country.

As the abilities of the general often make up for the weakneſs of an army, the *Britons* under his command confiding in him, looked upon the ſuperior force of their enemies with pleaſure, as promiſing them the greater glory. Nor was this confidence without foundation; he had led them to victory before, when they ſcarce deſerved the name of regular forces; and had ſince with unwearied care, aſſiſted their native valour with every advantage of the moſt judicious diſcipline. Under ſuch a commander therefore, what might not ſuch troops hope to do? But a difficulty ſtill more diſtreſſing than the inferiority of his force diſappointed all thoſe hopes.

Military operations are ſo complicated, that every motion of an army requires a correſpondent one, in that oppoſed to it. The obvious truth of this ſhews the ſagacity of planning, in the cloſet, the operations of the field. Particular objects indeed may be propoſed; but the method of accompliſhing them muſt be left to the judgment of the commander, as occaſion may direct, it being abſolutely impoſſible to foreſee, and provide for all the inſtantaneous contingencies, which muſt make an immediate deviation from any ſyſtem, that could have been laid down, indiſpenſably neceſſary. Where this diſcretionary power is abridged, and the motions of a general marked out for him, it muſt be from the fault of his adverſaries, if he performs any thing of conſequence.

The firſt, who introduced this ſcheme of ſhackling a commander, were churchmen, who puffed up by the power, which their influence over the weakneſs of princes gave them, diſdained to appear incapable of any thing; and therefore as their want of military knowledge would

would not permit their undertaking the actual command of armies, they took this method of shewing their abilities and authority, by directing how the commanders of them should proceed; a method, however absurd in itself, so flattering to human self-sufficiency, that princes adopted it after, when age or infirmity prevented their leading their forces in the field.

CHAP. XIX.

Continued. The natural event of such a situation. The general victorious over himself, quits the pursuit of military glory for the practice of the virtues of peace. Perfidy of the enemy justly punished. The army is formed again under the command of a GERMAN, *and a sugar-plum given to the* ENGLISH *to stop their mouths at such an insult.*

DISTRESSED more by directions of this kind than even by the weakness of his army, the *British* general took the field, rather in obedience to his duty than from any hope of success, and literally to *observe* the motions of an enemy whom he was not able to oppose.

The event was as he foresaw. The enemy, superior in strength, and at liberty to seize every advantage, while he could only act in consequence of orders, given at a distance, and impossible to be always proper, soon turned his attention from the defence of others to the preservation of his own army. But even this, the circumstances he was in made it impossible for all his judgment and intrepidity to effect, though displayed in a manner that made his name immortal, otherwise than by giving up the countries he was sent to defend, on the best terms he could procure, and disarming his own troops.

Mortifying as such a necessity must have been to an heart panting for glory, his conduct under it reflected more

more real honour upon him, than any victory gained againſt probability, at the imminent hazard of the loſs of his whole army could have done, as it ſhewed that he was ſuperior even to the deſire of fame, when claſhing with the intereſt of his country.

But they who had driven him to this neceſſity, by diſabling him from purſuing the dictates of his own judgment, thought proper to view his conduct in another light, and cenſure in him their own errors. The honeſt indignation of conſcious virtue could not brook treatment ſo diſingenuous. In juſtice to himſelf therefore, he reſigned all military command, and, quitting the profeſſion of arms for ever, devoted the remainder of his days to the practice of every virtue of peace.

As to the countries which he had been thus diſappointed from defending, their troubles ended not ſo eaſily. The enemy, in the inſolence of power, ſoon broke through the terms on which they had been given up, and treated the army that had ſubmitted on the ſecurity of public faith, with every inſtance of the moſt flagrant injuſtice.

All obligations are mutual. The breach of one party therefore diſengages the other. Provoked by ſuch perfidy, the injured army joined the natives, and aroſe with all the fury of revenge upon their oppreſſors. Such attacks are not to be reſiſted. The tyrants were driven out of all their conqueſts; and, to prevent their recovery of them, the army was formed again of force ſufficient to accompliſh the end propoſed, and the command of it given to a *German* of proved abilities, free from the reſtrictions which had made thoſe of the late commander of no effect, his miſcarriage having ſhewn the abſurdity of them; and the *Engliſh patriots*, who had before oppoſed the raiſing any ſuch army, having ſucceeded in their views of getting into power, and now aiding the deſign with all their influence; "though to palliate "their diſgrace, and to ſatisfy the jealouſy of the "*Engliſh*, they had the imaginary privilege of being "immediately under a commander of their own, and

"ſubject

" ſubject only to their own laws, in all things except " the operations of the war, when they were of ne- " ceſſity to obey the *German* commander in chief."— *Vol.* II. *p.* 215.

END OF THE FOURTH AND LAST VOLUME.

1912

B'D. SEP 20 1912